

HAD TO PROTECT HER

Introduction

.

For weeks now I've noticed my father sneaking out of the bedroom he shares with my mother and going into my 16 year old sister's bedroom at night when we are all supposed to be sleeping. Often times I toss and turn with heartache & anger as I hear the soft & muffled sobs of my sister. I think our mother knows about this but feels "powerless", my father is the sole bread winner at home without him we are going to suffer but I am struggling to keep this in much longer. I've been thinking of reporting him to the police or even informing social workers but what would become of my sister & mother? Their future & well being?

Who will look after them, I mean I'm still trying to make ends meet. Currently doing my first

year in university and now this recent discovery, it pains me to think of what my sister must be going through how this whole thing must be making her feel and how powerless she must be but who would believe me? I'm a troubled teen myself, drink and go out regularly, always been the problem child at home but now I'm in university I had to change my ways in order to get accepted & for my father to pay my fees. Now this! Aaah fuck man, fuck that bastard!

" Triiiiiiii!" That was the loud sound of my alarm, I hadn't even gotten any sleep and it was morning already. This thing with my dad & sister was really weighing heavy on me , I switched my alarm off and got out of bed to get ready for the day.

After my shower I went back to my room and my bed had already been made, that's my mother for you. She is a great mother believe me, I'm just failing to understand how she can't

protect her only daughter. I snapped out of my thoughts and carried on getting ready. Wore my navy chino shorts, white T-shirt and white Reebok sneakers.

"Zweli!!" - my mom shouted.

Me : "I'm coming ma!" I quickly sprayed some cologne and went downstairs for breakfast.

Everyone had already taken their seats just waiting for me.

Me : "Good morning"

Father : "You're late for breakfast again"

Me : "My apologies father"

Him : "We are not going to be held back by you every morning, understand?"

Me : "Yes sir" he looked at mother

Him : "Pass me the salt" she quickly passed him the salt and he sprinkled it on his eggs. I looked at my sister, she had lost so much weight and

even had bags under her eyes from the lack of sleep.

Me : "Babi" she looked up at me and faked a smile

Her : "Bhuti"

Me : "You don't look well, maybe I should take you to the doctor I only have one class today"

Her : "No bhuti I'm fine"

Me : "You are not fine Babalwa, after first..."

"Zwelibanzi!" My father roared.

Me : "She is not well!"

Him : "She said she is fine now eat your damn breakfast!"

Mother : "Baba please calm down"

Him : "Vuyi not now" I stood up from the table
"Sit down Zwelibanzi"

Me : "I've lost my appetite" I looked at Babalwa

who wasn't eating "Go take your bag Babi so we can leave" she climbed off her chair and headed to the lounge.

I took my backpack & car keys then we went to the car, I could hear baba shouting at ma for getting involved in the argument just now. I'm starting to hate that man.

By the way I am Zwelibanzi Kumkani Booii, aged 20. Take this journey with me

Insert 1

Δ

On the way to Babalwa's school she was quiet looking out the window, well she's always been of a quiet nature but I wish she could open up to me so that I can help her. Hell I'm struggling to tackle this situation myself! This is way bigger than me but seeing as the one person who should be protecting Babi is the one hurting her the most and our mother isn't doing

anything about it, it's up to me to act and spark some change. Help my sister before this damages her psychological health more than anything because that's hard to repair.

I stopped in front of her school.

Me : "Babi" she looked my way

Her : "Bhut wami"

Me : "You know I'm here for you if you need anything right? I mean anything Babalwa, I don't care how big you think it is. I want you to find refuge in me" she nodded "Do you want to tell me something?" She looked away nervously & shook her head.

I reached out for her hand and she jumped.

Me : "I'm sorry" she broke down there & then like she's been waiting to let it all out, I wrapped my arms around her as I comforted her "I'm sorry Babi, I know what he's doing but I need you to tell me everything in order for me to help

please" she shook her head "Please Babi"

She pulled out of the hug and wiped her tears.

Her : *sniffs* "No one will believe me"

Me : "I believe you Babalwa"

Her : "Bhuti you can't help me" she opened the door "Thank you for the ride"

Me : "Babalwa I'm still talking to you"

Her : "I'm going to be late for school Zwe" she closed the door.

I opened my window and held out her lunch money, she came and took it then walked away.

Sigh, how am I supposed to help someone who refuses to open up to me? As if this whole situation isn't difficult already! I mean me even thinking of going against my father could have me denied me by my whole family for shaming my father, this whole thing is just complicated. Not as easy as me just going to the police, I'll

need proof. What if Babalwa decides not to tell the truth and protects him? That's why I need her to open up to me, that is the first step to us fixing this situation and getting help.

The bell rang disturbing me from my thoughts, I started the car & drove off to pick up my girlfriend. When I got there she was already outside looking annoyed.

I got off the car and made my way to her, she didn't look impressed at all.

Me : "I'm sorry baby, I had a fight with dad this morning and also had some issues with Babi but I'm sorry" she handed me a lunch box

Her : "I packed you breakfast but its cold now"

Me : "Baby I'm sorry" I hugged her and kissed her neck repeatedly & she gave in, I looked at her and she was smiling "Morning my queen"

Her : "Morning Kumkani"

Me : "Mhmmm love it when you call me Kumkani" I winked at her and she giggled "Thank you for breakfast" she pecked my lips

Her : "You're welcome. Let's go"

Me : "A proper kiss before we go first" I pouted

Her : "My parents are still home baby" I pulled her behind the wall where they couldn't see us and she pulled me into a deep hungry kiss, it lasted for a while then she pulled out and looked at me smiling. "I love you"

Me : "I love you more Imi" I pecked her lips then held her hand as we walked to the car. I opened the door for her and after she got in I shut the door and I went over to my side.

As soon as I started the car she connected the aux to her cellphone and played her music but I didn't mind cause we more or less had the same music taste but today she played a song that really touched me "Sade _ Pearls", it moved

me and I guess she noticed cause I felt her touch on my shoulder. I looked at her as she looked at me with concerned eyes

Her : "You okay?" I nodded "Babe..." I took her hand and kissed it

Me : "I'm okay baby just the song hit some nerves"

Her : "Wanna talk about it?"

Me : *smiles* "I'm good baby" I stopped at a red light and quickly stole a kiss then placed my hand on her high squeezing it "I'm fine"

Her : "Okay, do you have practice today?"

I played rugby for the schools first team, something I was really passionate about and wanted to do professionally but baba said I first need to get a degree before he can consider me doing it full-time professionally and because I couldn't do it without financial aid, here I am doing my first year in anthropology. A lot of

people have asked me what exactly is anthropology well it is a comparative study of cultural and human life that officially became an academic discipline during the 20th century and what I'll basically be doing is going into societies and studying how they live by becoming one with the community. But I'm not yet certain if that's what I want to major in because I'm a family man and with being an anthropologist I'll be away from home a lot so my two majors at the moment are anthropology & neuro-psychology, I'll decide in the final year of my B/A degree.

Back to now though! I did kinda get carried away there didn't I .

Me : "Yeah we have practice babe, preparing for next week's match"

Her : "Oh okay, I'll uber home then"

Me : "Need money?"

Her : "Still have my allowance and besides you promised to take Babi & I to the movies, I think she needs it. She did say she wants to talk to me about something"

We had just arrived in campus so I parked the car and looked at her.

Me : "About what?"

Her : "She didn't say Kumkani"

Me : "Whatever you guys discuss don't discuss it with anybody else but me, understand?"

Her : "Excuse me?"

Me : "Iminam do you understand me?"

Her : "Yes geez! When have I ever spread gossip Kumkani? I don't know what is up with you this morning but stop being a grump if you not going to talk to me about what's bothering you" she grabbed her backpack from the backseat and opened the door, I quickly held her hand

and she shoot me an evil look. Okay she's being serious.

Her : "Let me go Banzi"

Me : "Baby..." She looked at my hand that was holding hers then back at me and I let go.

Her : "See you after class."

She walked out and closed the door, everything is just going sour for me today.

Anyway after my first class I quickly went to the student centre and bought pizza slices, coldrinks & Manhattan sour beans, quickly warmed the eggs & bacon Imi had made me this morning then went to our spot. When I got there she was sitting on her laptop with her earphones connected. She looked up and saw me then pulled them off & smiled at me.

Her : "Hey" she stood up and pecked my lips before sitting on the table, I sat next to her and gave her the food I had bought. "I'm sorry about

this morning baby, shouldn't have walked away from you like that"

Me : "Its okay, I'm also sorry for taking my issues out on you"

Her : "Want to talk about what's bothering you?"

Me : "Not now baby"

Her : "Okay then, when you're ready" I nodded and pecked her forehead. I love her so much but I'm not ready to share what's going on at home with her, not until Babi is comfortable with telling me what's going on.

Me : "Let's eat" she nodded and quickly switched her laptop off before we indulged in our food, she wasn't the type that was shy to eat in front of her boyfriend she was free around me.

God I love this girl, with the messed up shit that's happening in my life right now she is the only thing that seems to be going right for me

and no we weren't high school sweet hearts. We met at Orientation and since then we have been stuck together like glue.

•

This is just an introduction to our main characters life, please tell me what you guys think

Insert 2

△

After supper Babalwa insisted that we watch movies, it was Friday night so she could stay up late. We were going to watch the movies in my room since I had a 2 sitter couch and tv there it was convenient, I wanted to use this opportunity to talk to her again cause I'm tired of the way things are going in this house. I feel suffocated & uncomfortable, I can't keep on pretending everything is okay and sit at the same table with that sick man I call a father. I

despise every minute of it!! I'm angry! Fuming!!
Fuck man!

Nothing I hate more than having to play happy family with that bastard of a father.

"Zwe.." Babalwa called out, she had a bowl of popcorn in her one hand and her fleece blanket in the other.

My face softened up and she smiled, why did he have to do this to her. I hate him! Calm down Kumkani.

I took a deep breath out.

Me : "Come and sit, I'm looking for a movie for us to watch"

Her : "A movie?" She sat next to me "Thought we are watching movies!"

Me : *chuckles* "Okay whatever you want Babi" she smiled and covered herself with her blanket then placed the bowl of popcorn on her lap.

Her : "Let's watch a Sci-Fi movie first"

Me : *smiles* "You already know it"

I finally found a movie for us to watch and pressed play then leaned back on the couch.

Me : "How was school?"

Her : "It was okay"

Me : "You sure?"

Her : "Bhuti sssh! The movie" I faked a smile then shifted my focus to the tv screen.

She wasn't okay, doesn't matter how hard she tried to put up a front she was already broken. Our father *chuckles* that nigga really did a number on her but not anymore. I am tired of his disgusting bullshit.

I tried by all means to concentrate on the movie, halfway through it my bedroom door opened. Babi and I shifted our focus from the tv screen to the door and there he stood. Babalwa

secretly held onto my hand tight.

Him : "It's late Vuyelwa" he was referring to Babalwa

Me : "It's Friday night"

Him : "Vuyelwa" she looked at me with begging eyes

Me : "Dad it's Friday can you just let us be please" he stood still for a while then finally said "okay" and walked out. Pathetic really, I hate that man

As soon as he left Babi let out a loud sigh.

Me : "It's okay" she nodded "he won't stop Babalwa"

Her : "I know"

Me : "Let me help you Babi" she shook her head

Her : "It will ruin everything, mama won't be able to take it"

Me : "Babalwa..."

Her : "You have to finish your studies, if he goes to jail then your dreams will go down the drain"

Me : "Babalwa!"

Her : *chuckles* "It just had to be me, he has a wife. I know she's sick but this..."

Me : "Wait what do you mean mama is sick?"

Her : "You did not know?"

Me : "Know what Babalwa?"

Her : "Mama suffers from depression and anxiety, I thought you knew"

Me : "What the hell? Why don't I know about this"

Her : "She was diagnosed when you were in boarding school"

Me : "Are you shitting on me right now?"

Her : "I thought you knew Zwe"

Me : "I'm sure he caused it, that sick psychopath!"

I don't know what came over me the next thing I know the bowl of popcorn is on the floor and I charged for the door.

"Zweli!" She half shouted then ran for the door and stood in front of it.

Her : "You are going to get me in trouble Zwe please calm down"

Me : "He's breaking you guys and you expect me to just sit & watch!"

Her : "shhh! Zwe please" her face was wet with tears, she put her hand over her mouth "please"

I pulled her into my arms and she silently cried, so did I . This is more fucked up than I thought, its way bigger than me but I'm not going to throw in the towel no way. I need to do something.

Me : "I'm sorry" she nodded "You can sleep here today" she looked at me with a smile then quickly squeezed me

Her : "Thank you" I kissed the crown of her head, pulled out of the hug and wiped her tears then she wiped mine smiling.

I don't know how she managed to with everything that's going on.

I let her have the bed while I slept on the couch, I wanted her to feel comfortable. As soon as I heard her snoring I fell into a deep slumber too.

"Zweli" someone shook me.

Me : "Mh.hm"

"Natasha is downstairs with Lubanzi, wake up" it was my mom. I looked at her

Me : "I'm coming" she stood there waiting for me to stand up "Mama"

Her : "5 minutes Zwe"

Me : "Okay"

She opened the curtains and windows then walked out of my room. I was now alone, I dragged myself to the bathroom. I quickly brushed my teeth then showered, when I was done with everything I wore my black sweatpants and a black T-shirt then made my way downstairs.

"In here Zweli!" She shouted from the lounge and I made my way there, you could hear the laughter and it was because of Natasha probably telling ma & Babi about how naughty Lubanzi is.

Lubanzi is our 2 year old son, we had him while we were still in high school. Not proud of this but he is my son.

"Morning" I said as soon as I entered.

Ma : "I said 5 minutes Zweli"

Me : "I know ma eish sorry" I looked at Natasha

and winked "hey, sorry for keeping you waiting"

Her : "it's okay"

Me : "how are you?" I looked around the lounge
"where is he?"

Her : "I'm fine, he is asleep in Babalwa's room"
ma stood up and left so did Babi.

I sat on the couch across hers.

Me : "Thought you were only bringing him next
week Tash"

Her : "I know but I have an interview Monday
morning, I'd like to prepare for it and you know I
can't do that with Banzi around"

Me : "Interview?"

Her : "Just part-time work, we need to start
saving for Junior"

Me : "Okay, where are his things?"

Her : "Everything is in Babalwa's room" I nodded

"I should get going"

Me : "Okay" I stood up "let me walk you out" she stood up, took her handbag and fixed herself.

"Ma, Tash is leaving!" I shouted

She appeared from the kitchen doorframe.

Her : "Safe trip baby, thank you for bringing Jr over"

Natasha : *smiles* "No problem ma, if he gives you any problems you can call me"

Me : "I can handle my son Natasha"

Her : *clears throat* "Bye ma"

We walked out.

Her : "You'll never stop"

Me : "Not this again, you came to drop him off. It's done now you can leave, I don't want to fight with you"

Her : *sighs* "I miss you Zweli, I miss us"

Me : "Tash" we were now standing by the gate, her driver was waiting outside.

Her : "Zweli you know how much I love you, why are you punishing me?"

Me : "Punishing you? You're the one who ended us Natasha!"

Her : "Because!! Because you weren't making time for us Zweli, all you cared about was Banzi and rugby but I miss you baby please"

Me : "I've moved on"

Her : "Do you love her?" I nodded "more than me?" She started getting teary

Me : "Tasha please" I hated seeing her cry, truth is I loved her yes more than Iminam even but we could never work out. We fought too much, we were toxic for each other and I don't need that not with everything going on at home.

Me : "Come here" I pulled her into a hug "I hate

seeing you cry" I kissed the top of her head and inhaled the scent of her hair. After a while she calmed down and we sat on the pavement.

Me : "You know why we aren't together right?"
She nodded "So why do you want us to go back there? Always unhappy and arguing"

Her : "It will be different Zweli, I'll change" I shook my head

Me : "You're perfect just the way you are, but you and I weren't meant to be. I love you yes but together we weren't happy Tash" I sighed
"Maybe in future we can try again but right now lets focus on raising our son okay?" She nodded,
I stood up. "Good luck on your interview on Monday"

Her : "Thanks" she couldn't look at me, she had her eyes on the floor and was busy fiddling with her fingers

Me : "You'll let me know when you want to fetch

Banzi"

"yeah" she said in a low tone.

I sighed then walked into the yard and closed the gate. As soon as she heard the gate close she let it all out and it had me fucked up but I was doing this for her, for us to be happy not miserable like we were when we were together.

-
-

NATASHA

△

I love Zweli so much, I know he loves me too. I guess my insecurities mixed with his anger issues were toxic and were the reason why our relationship ended. I wish he had been more patient with me, I was just scared that he would find someone else who was better than me after I had Junior. I lost all my confidence, he

tried assuring me that no girl stood a chance and only I had the key to his heart but it was hard considering all that attention he got from girls.

Zweli is a sporty guy, he's handsome and has a vibe to him girls love that not to mention his family being wealthy but I saw more than that. He is caring, very protective and loving partner . Always made sure I knew how special I was and that was always honest but his temper! Oh Lord Zweli has a bad temper, he has never hit me no but his temper is bad!

I remember how he tore up my bedroom because of a picture I had posted on Instagram, well I was in a bikini and he hated the fact that I had exposed my body for everyone to see. What angered him even more were the comments made by some of the guys under that certain picture, Zweli not only has a bad temper but is a very jealous and controlling partner but still I

loved him. He was dominant and I found that very attractive but I ruined everything with my insecurities.

When I asked for us to take a break he took offence, thought I was just looking for ways to end us but I wasn't. I just wanted us to breath and think of ways to better our relationship for the sake of our son!

"Baartman" my driver called out disturbing my trail of thought.

Him : "We're here" I looked outside the window and we were home

Me : "Thank you" I was about to open the door when he said

"Hold your head up high and everything is gonna be alright"

I looked back at him and smiled

Me : "Thank you" he nodded.

I walked inside the house and my mom was in the lounge

Her : "Hey baby, how did it go?" I sighed "Awww pumpkin" she made her way to me and embraced me in her arms "At least you tried nana, he knows you love him. You've done your part, now just focus on you and junior okay?" I nodded "now go to your room and prepare for that interview princess"

Me : "Thanks mommy"

-
-

BABALWA

△

Where do I even begin? How it all started right? *chuckles* it's sick really how we have come to this point, not that we were the perfect family but we were happy once upon a time. The only

problem we had was my older brother who was always getting in trouble until my father finally decided that he needed to go to boarding school after he got Natasha pregnant, but you see that was the only "REAL" problem we had in the Boo household back then but now

Wow my own father, a man I considered my hero is breaking me. I don't know who I am anymore, I've lost touch with the real me the minute he saw me in a sexual light a part of me died. The first time it happened I was oblivious to what was going on, even after it happened. I didn't know how to react, I didn't cry or anything I was in shock and I had no one. Zweli was in boarding school and my mother had just been admitted to a psychiatric ward because her anxiety & depression, I don't know what led her to that point all I know is I'd fall asleep to the sound of her cries almost every night until one day where she just sat unresponsive and

oblivious to what was going on around her. Ever since that day I have been my father's sex machine, he claims it's my duty to serve him as my mother's daughter since my mom can longer fulfill her wifely duties in the bedroom.

I feel so dirty and disgusting, I've thought of suicide so many times but that would push my mother to the edge. She's too fragile.

"Vuyelwa" my heart dropped instantly, I looked up and he was standing by the door.

Me : "Tata"

Him : *smirks* "How is my princess doing?" I'm dying inside !! I need your protection instead you're the one I'm afraid of

Me : "I'm fine"

Him : "Okay, good." He walked inside and closed the door "I want us to try something new today"

I shifted uncomfortable on my bed

Him : "Have you heard of oral sex before?" I shook my head "don't worry daddy will teach you princess"

He took out his phone and showed me a video, I was more than disgusted!

When the video was came to an end, he placed his phone on the bed. Took my hand into his and I was already treming! He took my hand and placed it on his hard erection, a tear fell down my cheek.

Me : "Daddy please I don't want to do this please I'm begging you please"

Him : "Vuyelwa"

Me : "look Lubanzi is sleeping with me we can't" I hoped having junior in my room would help but he wasn't phased in fact he completely ignored his presence.

Him : "He's just a kid" I swallowed "Now be a good girl, don't bore me"

Me : "I don't know how to do this" he growled and stood up frustrated then slapped me

Him : "Don't" he unbuckled his pants as he stood in front of me, grabbed the back of my head and forced his penis into my mouth he began moving in & out taking deeper strokes every time and I was struggling to breathe while he enjoyed himself.

My bedroom door opened and he quickly pulled his penis out of my mouth but it was too late. Zweli had already seen it all.

Zweli : "You sick piece of shit!!" He charged at him and threw in a punch. I felt sick to my stomach, threw up right there and then!

Zweli was feasting on him and with each punch his hand came out bloodier! I screamed for him to stop.

"Zweli you going to kill him!!!!" I shouted and it woke Lubanzi up, I quickly went to him and

covered his eyes. He was too young to see all this, I kept screaming for Zweli to stop but he wouldn't. Even his son began kicking and screaming now, Zweli abruptly stopped punching dad and I saw the look of horror in his eyes. Dad wasn't moving anymore.

"What's going on..." She froze at the door

Her : "Zweli"

Him : "Mama" he looked scared, I was horrified!

Her : "Zwe..." She fainted right there and then. Zweli was on his knees looking at dad.

Me : "Zweli umama!" Nothing "Zweli man!"

Insert 3

△

I looked at my father as he laid there motionless and bloody, I did not mean for things to get this far! I was just angry! No not angry but fuming at the sight I had encountered

when I opened Babalwa's bedroom door.

He was a sick and perverted man who had no morals! His own daughter and in front of my fucken son! He was really mentally disturbed, no sane man would do such to his daughter in front of a child! He made my blood boil and the look on his face when I opened the door sickens me, he made me do it! I didn't mean to!

I was brought back to life by the loud sound of police sirens, I looked at Babalwa with my mouth hanging and her eyes looked like they were about to pop out of her skull. At that moment I knew I was doomed!

Her : "I'm sorry Zweli, I should have listened the first time you tried to help I'm sorry Kumkani" she sobbed and so did my son probably because of the screaming and shouting "I didn't mean for any of this to happened Zwe forgive me please"

"I killed him" that is only thing I could utter in that moment.

"PUT YOUR HANDS UP WE ARE COMING IN ARMED!" My life is over, I just killed my father.

The police came in with guns and froze at the sight in front of them as they stood by the door.

Policeman : "Put your hands up where I can see them!" The other one walked around the room inspecting if there was anyone else in there with us while the door charged for me and kicked me down as he cuffed me.

Me : "I didn't mean to do it!!!"

Him : "You have the right to remain silent..." He stated my rights as he took me in.

Babalwa was screaming and crying, so was Lubanzi. My heart was shattered then I remembered my mother passed had blacked out by the door, I hope she was okay. Everything is a mess.

Outside the house I was met by the police van, paramedics rushed inside the house all this while my neighbours watched some taking pictures.

I was pushed into the back of a police van, my life is over . I could still hear Babalwa's screams and my son crying, my heart was completely shattered.

-
-

NATASHA

△

I was getting ready for bed when my cellphone rang, I looked at the caller id & it was an unknown number. I was a bit sceptical at first but I ended up answering my phone.

Me : "Hello"

Unknown : "Natasha! You have to come please!"

Everything is a mess Tasha please!!!" She sobbed

Me : "Wait who is this?"

Her : "It's me Babalwa *sniffs* you have to come Natasha. Zweli has been arrested, mom & dad have been taken to hospital..." My heart stopped, not my Zweli

Me : "No no no! Babalwa is this some sick joke! Where are you!!?"

Her : "At the house but the police are taking me with them to the police station"

Me : "Okay I'm coming, just remain calm"

Her : "Hurry!"

I hung up quickly changed into jeans, a hoodie with my push ins. I didn't have time for anything else I just wore a doek and rushed downstairs, my parents were in the lounge watching tv.

Me : "mama I need your car keys please" they

both looked at me confused "Zweli has been arrested, his parents are in hospital and Babalwa was taken to the police station I have to go!"

Mom : "Oh God! Hunny go get the car keys" she was talking to my dad, she looked at me "don't cry sweety" I shook my head

Me : "I can't loose him again mommy" she got up and hugged me

Her : "You won't, your dad and I will make sure of it"

"Natasha let's go!" My dad shouted already walking out the front door

Mom : "Go"

I ran after him and he was already in the car warming the engine, I hopped in and off we went. On the way I was stressing hardcore! Hoping Zweli wasn't in major trouble, my son cannot grow up without his father and Zweli

wouldn't survive the thought of not being there for junior. That would kill him!

"Natasha" - my dad called out for my attention
"I'll get him out okay?"

Me : "Okay"

Him : "Let's go inside"

We got out the car and headed inside the police station. Babalwa was sitting on one of the benches with my baby sleeping on her lap, she was starring into space with tears that had dried out on her cheeks. I rushed to her while my dad spoke to one of the policeman sitting by the reception table.

Me : "Babalwa" she looked up and immediately her eyes starting tearing up.

Her : "It's my fault, everything is my fault. I should have listened to him in the first place then non of this would have happened but I was scared Tasha I was scared!" She sobbed.

I took Banzi from her then embraced her with my free arm.

Me : "It's going to be okay, my dad is going to fix it. He will get him out of here"

Her : *in tears* "If only I listened Tasha..."

Me : "Shhh stop blaming yourself" i brushed her back, she seemed really worked up about this whole thing.

I didn't want to seem insensitive by asking what happened so I just did what I could which is to comfort her.

"Tasha" I looked up and my dad was standing in front of us.

Him : "I'm going to speak to Zweli in order to know where he stands so that we can act okay?" I nodded "Should I get you guys coffee?"

Me : "Zweli needs you more, go please"

Him : "Okay princess"

He walked to the officer that was waiting for him and they disappeared down the hallway, Babalwa was falling asleep so I let her lay her head on my lap then placed Banzi comfortably on the bench in his blanket.

I'm so confused and disoriented, when I went over to the Booi house earlier everything was fine. Well according to me everything was fine but now? I really don't know but what I do know is I want Zweli out of this place.

"He refuses to talk" - my father said, I looked at him in disbelief

Me : "What do you mean?"

Him : "Exactly that Natasha, the boy won't talk" I sighed

Me : "Can I try to talk some sense into him? What did the police say?"

Him : "He almost beat his father to death"

Me : "What!? No Zweli isn't violent"

Him : "Well his father is in ICU as we speak"

Me : "I want to talk to him dad"

Him : "Princess..."

Me : "Dad I want to speak to him" I stood up careful not to wake Babalwa up "Please look after junior"

Him : *sighs* "okay"

I went to the officer and asked to be taken to Zweli, he wrapped up whatever paper work he was busy with then took me to the room he was in. Before going inside I took a deep breathe in then walked in, he was looking down. The officer gave us space and closed the door

Me : "Kumkani" he looked up, my heart broke instantly. He was a mess!

-
-

ZWELIBANZI

Δ

She looked at me and just as I thought she started tearing up, I shook my head and looked aside trying not to tear up again. She sniffed

Her : "Baby" I looked at her, she wiped her tears then sat down across the table "What happened? Why did you do it?"

Me : "Had to protect her Natasha"

Her : "Protect who Zweli?"

Me : "I had to protect Babalwa even though it was too late I still had to do something"

Her : "You're not making sense" I sighed

Me : "Have they taken Babalwa to hospital?"

Her : "Hospital for what Zweli talk? Babalwa is losing it out there blaming herself that she should have listened but non of you want to talk! Your parents are in hospital, your dad is ICU..."

Me : "Wait he's not dead?"

Her : "Did you mean for him to die!?" She looked at me in shock, I just stared at her. "Zweli he is your father!"

Me : "That bastard is nothing to me" she took a deep breathe in

Her : "Okay *sigh* can you work with my dad please? He's trying to help, its fine if you don't want to tell me what happened but you need to tell him everything for him to be able to help get you out of here. Babalwa needs you, junior needs you. I need you Zweli" she was starting to get emotional

Me : "He was molesting Babalwa, tonight he was doing it in front of our son" she abruptly wiped her tears as her mouth hung wide open "I need you to get Babalwa to hospital so that they can test her okay?" She just starred at me in shock "Natasha I can trust you right baby?"

She slowly nodded "Take care of Babalwa make sure she gets help okay princess?"

Her : "Okay"

Me : "Now go out there tell your dad I'm ready to talk"

Her : "Uhh.. Ummmh, okay" she stood up as disoriented as she was and walked to the door.

Me : "Natasha" she stopped in her tracks but didn't turn around to face me "I love you" she turned around and looked at me

Her : "I love you too" I gave her a slight smile

Me : "Now go out there and do what I asked"

Her : "Be strong Kumkani"

Me : "You know it"

She smiled then turned around and walked out.

I really did love her, her being here right now showed me just how much she really loved me

too. After this whole mess I need to make things right with her, I can't believe he lived. A part of me was actually happy thinking he had died, I was happy that we wouldn't have to deal with him anymore. That we could focus on Babalwa healing but he is still out there breathing! His heart still beats, he will pay for what he did to Babalwa. Come to think of it death would have been the easy way out for him no! I'm glad he lived, I want him to be as miserable as he made mama and Babalwa. He must feel all the pain they felt!

"Ready to talk?" - Mr Baartman said as he entered the interrogation room. I sighed then nodded

Me : "Yes sir"

Him : "Okay" he sat down took some papers out of his briefcase then got a pen "I'm going to need you to tell me everything from scratch, everything that led up to this point and you

must be brutally honest with me. Thats the only way I can help, do you understand me son?"

Me : "Yes sir I do"

Him : "Okay you can start" I took a deep breathe.

Me : "It all started when I started noticing some changes upon my return from boarding but I was too oblivious to what was happening around me..." He took notes as I spoke.

Insert 4

△

BABALWA

•

We (Natasha, Banzi and I) were on our way to the hospital driving behind the police van, they had been notified about my father molesting me. I didn't want people to know! They now probably saw me as a dirty bitch who slept with a man who is supposed to be her father, a 16

year old with no morals! All the nasty things my father called me

I am broken, today he took the last piece of me just thinking about it made me sick.

God why have you forsaken me!? Each time he came into my room you turned a blind eye! You saw my suffering and did nothing for 2 years you did nothing God! do you even exist? I feel alone and abandoned. Why can't I have normal problems that girls my age are facing? Why did I have to be the one to face such messed up issues! This is bigger than me, it weighs heavily upon my shoulders.

"We are here Babalwa" - Tash said

Me : "Thank you for coming with me"

Her : "Don't mention it, if you need anything my parents and I are here okay?"

Me : "Thank you"

Her : "Let's go inside" I nodded

She took stepped out of the car and I remained inside while she got junior from the backseat in his car seat.

Sigh, okay I was about to do this. I'm ready! I took a deep breathe in and a deep breathe out then stepped out of then car too. We walked into the hospital and Natasha had to stay in the waiting room while I went for the tests, we left the hospital after 3am then we drove back to the police station as I still needed to give my statement and press charges against Lungelo.

I'm so tired! I'm too young for all this, its too much for me! I can't handle all this stress and pressure. I'm worried about my mother's wellbeing, worried about my brother's future and scared for my life! I'm scared of what will happened when he finally wakes up from that hospital bed, I'm scared he will come for me again or even kill me! I just want all of this to

end! I want to be normal but then again what is normal?

Sigh, I just wish this never happened to me that's all I wish for. I wish it was all just a bad dream but it isn't this is my reality, my sick disgusting reality

"Hey" - Natasha, I looked up and she had two cups of coffee in hand.

Her : "Got us some coffee" she handed me a cup

Me : "Thank you" she sat down next to me

Her : "Don't mention it" I nodded "how are you feeling?"

Me : *sighs* "tired"

Her : "Hang in there, we will get through this. If you need anything don't be scared to ask just know I'm here, anytime"

Me : "Thanks"

Her : *sigh* "I have bad news" my heart rate started going up, I could feel it "Zweli is going to spend the weekend in here, the magistrate is only available Monday at 12 so we can only apply for bail then"

Me : "No no no he can't sleep here Natasha! He can't!"

Her : "My dad..."

Me : "No Natasha! If anyone should be in a cell right now it's me! I'm the worthless daughter who was molested by her father and its my fault! Everything is my fault, my father molesting me and Zweli being here its all me! I should have..."

Her : "Stop! Just stop okay!" She took a deep breathe in, so did I. My nose had become runny, I was in tears "Look non of this is your fault Babalwa..."

Me : "Yes it is..." She shook her head

Her : "The only person at fault here is that excuse of a man in hospital right now for putting his family through so much misery. It's his fault for having such sick thoughts and thinking what he was doing to his family was okay, he took advantage of you Babalwa. You had no control over what happened" I shook my head crying

Me : "I could have reported him earlier Tasha"

Her : "Sweetie, you were scared and its understandable okay? You felt alone and scared but non of this is your fault, Zweli did what any loving brother would do for his sister and that is to protect you from that monster. All Zweli wishes for is that you get all the help you need"

Me : "I'm fine, its over now" she shook her head

Her : "You are not fine Babi, you need to get professional help. You have so much to deal with and this is only the beginning but you have

a loving brother who cares for you, he'll do anything to make sure you are okay" she wiped my tears then cupped my face "get help please, make all Zweli's efforts to protect you worth it. You need to get help for your sake, in order for you to heal"

Me : "Okay"

Her : "Okay?"

Me : "I'll get help as soon as my brother is out of jail" she nodded

Her : "understandable"

Me : "Zweli is an idiot for letting you go" she giggled

Her : "Right! *laughs* but I love him either way" it was evident no one could miss it really

Me : *nods* "I know Tasha"

We hugged then sat and drank our coffee's, after a while we left the station for Natasha's

house. They offered to accommodate me while this whole ordeal took place, we got there and it was around 5 in the morning.

Quietly we made our way to her room, her father had left the station and she had come home to drop junior while I gave in my statement and officially pressed charges against Lungelo, my father.

Tasha : "You can go shower so long" we were in her room "I already made arrangements for you"

Me : "Thank you" she winked at me

Her : "I'm gonna go shower in the guest suite okay?"

Me : "Okay but we sleeping together Right?"

Her : "No doubt, shout if you need anything but do be mindful of Junior" I smiled before nodding, he was sleeping in his cot next to her bed.

She walked out of the room and closed the door, I walked into the bathroom and there was a pair of fresh new pajamas and a bunch of other things. She was really sacrificing so much for me I had to thank her properly when everything settles.

I took off the clothes I had on and with every item I took off I more and more vulnerable, I stepped inside the shower and as soon as I let the water flow I cried! I cried because of how much of a mess my life was, I cried for my happiness that I lost a long time ago. I cried for not listening to Zweli when he first tried to help me now everyone is suffering because of me!

I felt like the stupid worthless whore that my father saw each and every time he came to my. I had just ruined Zweli's life, his future. Caused disruption in his 2 year old son's life and the whole Baartman family! Not only that but now my mother's life hangs by the thread because

of her fragile heart.

How could I have been so selfish! I'm just like him! Only think of myself and to hell with everybody else around me! I'm nothing short of what he is, its probably even my fault he did the things he did to me.

"There's nothing wrong with what we are doing Vuyelwa, all father's do this with their daughters now stop being difficult" he said

Me : "Daddy it hurts please stop please!" I sobbed

Him : "Vuyelwa!"

Me : "please tata ndakucela" (daddy please)

I begged him each and everytime but he never stopped, it seemed like the more I begged, the more I motivated him to inflict more pain on me

"Babalwa, are you okay in there?" - Natasha

asked from the other side of the door

Me : "I'm fine, 5 minutes"

Her : "Okay,I'm really tired so I'm just going to sleep now cause jr is going to wake up soon"

Me : "okay"

I wiped my tears then switched off the tap then stepped out of the shower and there he stood.

Me : "W..wha..what... How did you..." He chuckled and it sent chills down my spine

Him : "I have my ways, I get things done. You should know that by now princess"

Me : "No leave me alone!"

Him : "not so quick" he was about to touch me but I quickly closed my eyes and covered my eyes then started screaming...

Me : "Not again please I'll be good I promise please please" I felt his touch on my shoulder
"No! No! No!"

"hey hey, its me Tasha" I shook my head still with my eyes closed "Babalwa listen to me, its Natasha.He's not here sweety, there's police outside his ward he won't escape. It's all in your head" I opened my eyes and looked at her crying

Me : "He was here Tasha, he was going to hurt me again" she shook her head crying too now "he was going to hurt me like he always did in the shower. I'm scared"

She grabbed the towel wrapped it around and took me to her bed then laid down with me.

Her : "He won't hurt you again, not while Zweli lives. He won't allow it, never!" We were laying on our sides facing each other, she wiped my tears "Don't allow him to have power over you"

Me : "I'm scared Tasha"

Her : "You're safe here okay?" I nodded, she wiped the tears that had fallen down my cheeks

again and I wiped hers too. She smiled "I like you very much sis even if your brother and I aren't together just know I got you okay"

Me : *giggles* "I like you too sis"

Her : "hold my hand" I did as she told me "how does it feel?"

Me : "Soft and warm"

Her : *giggles* "What do they remind you of?"

Me : "The first time you made me bath jr"

Her : "Remember how happy you were that day?" I nodded "now close your eyes and think of that da, you bathing jr for the first time"

Me : *giggles* "this feels weird" I closed my eyes and she hummed the same song I hum for jr every time I want him to go to sleep, I felt at peace remembering how happy we were when he was born and how excited I was thinking he was mine.

All this was stupid but it did the trick, I fell asleep peacefully .

Insert 5

△

NATASHA

•

After Babalwa slept, I slept too. I was so exhausted! Being up all night going up and down helping Babalwa and making sure she was okay was really a ton of work all I needed was sleep so did she. This young girl has been through so much, I don't think I would have been able to handle all she has been through honestly, I clap my hands for her because she is a strong young lady but she does need professional help we need to make sure she gets it.

Just as I was enjoying my sleep I was woken up by my mother omg I wanted to cry! I literally just

fell asleep!!

Her : "your dad and I are going to sort some things for Zweli and look into some options for Babalwa" she had Banzi in her arms who was still in pajamas and had his bottle in hand, she was dressed up and ready

Me : "can't you take him with you mama I'm really tired"

Her : "his cheerful presence is needed here baby" I sighed, she handed Lubanzi to me then walked to the door. "I made you guys breakfast"

Me : "Thanks mom" she nodded then closed the door after walking. I looked beside me and Babalwa was dead sleep! I wish I was sleeping yoh. I sighed then looked at Banzi who was sitting on top of me sucking his bottle "Lala" (sleep).

Zweli & I agreed that with Lubanzi it would be IsiXhosa all the way during his baby phase, we

didn't want our baby only speaking English like no! That's not cute at all. I don't get why some parents think their children speaking English from an early age is adorable or makes them clever like no! Let the black child know his/her roots first before introducing them to the language of our oppressors, that's just my opinion.

He took his bottle out of his mouth

Him : "Amfun" (his way of saying of I don't want to) then put it back in his mouth, I faked cried and he looked at me with concern "teni?" (What's wrong) I sniffed "Isungu?" (It hurts) I nodded and pointed my head "Xolo" (sorry) he brushed it with his free hand while the other held his bottle

Me : " come sleep on mommy's chest" I spoke to him in Xhosa but I'll just type it in English for the sake of saving time.

He laid on my chest and I hummed for him while brushing his back and he eventually fell asleep, I scored about 2 hours of sleep before he woke up again, I can forget sleeping anytime soon after this we gonna have to wait for his nap time. I looked over at Babalwa and she was still sleeping, understandably so because we slept early morning. Jr and I went downstairs for some food, after eating we bathed then just chilled in my room. I didn't want to wake or disturb Babalwa because she needed the sleep more than anybody else so I had to let her be & played with my son although he kept calling Zweli's name. He was probably confused as to why Babalwa was here and not his father, he took my phone and kept on calling out for his father I took my laptop and played a video of his father and it worked. I missed him just as badly.

"Hi"- Babalwa said softly, I looked up and she was sitting up on the bed

Me : " Hey, we didn't wake you now did we?" She shook her head "oh okay how are you feeling this morning?"

Her : *sighs* "Under the circumstances, I'm okay"

Me : "I understand"

"Baba!" - jr shouted he was talking about Babalwa. He walked towards the bed as he struggled to climb on it, Babi helped him up.

Babalwa : "Hello"

Him : "Hello"

Her : "Njani?" (How are you?)

Him : "Phiyiye" (philile - I'm fine)

His speech wasn't perfect but he was trying, they conversed back and forth with each other and I went to prepare Babalwa's bath then called her to the bathroom. She made her way inside with Lubanzi walking behind her.

Me : "Please bath then we can go see Zweli, I'll go prepare something for us to eat"

Her : "I'm not really hungry Tash..."

Me : "You have to eat" she sighed then nodded "Thank you" I looked at Lubanzi standing next to me "Let's go boy" I held his hand and we walked out, giving Babalwa some privacy. I made the bed with the 'help' of junior. That's in invented comas because all he wanted was to play with the blankets and pillows the whole time but in the end we finished and I went to take something for Babalwa to wear, she was thicker than I was so we couldn't wear the same jeans. I took out my black maxi dress for her with a cardigan and some simple scandals.

She came out of the bathroom as I laid out the clothes I had chose for her on the bed.

Me : "The lotion is in the wardrobe, we can go buy the products that you use later"

Her : "Okay, thank you"

Lubanzi had made my wall his art gallery, we tried giving him colouring books but he always ended drawing on my wall so I just let him be. Right now he was busy with a crayon on my wall, the joys of motherhood

Me : "Lubanzi" he looked at me "Give me that crayon"

Him : "Hay hay hay!"

Me : "Please"

Him : "Hay haaaaay!" He started screaming, this boy does not listen

Me : "Okay bye bye" I walked towards the door and he started crying "Come let's go" he began walking towards me, I looked at Babalwa "You'll find us in the kitchen"

Her : "No problem"

I opened the door, letting Junior walk out first

then I walked behind him after closing the door. I just didn't want to make Babalwa uncomfortable. I respected her privacy, going down the staircase with Banzi the door opened with my parents walking in.

Me : "Hi guys" as soon as we got off the staircase Banzi rushed to my mother who picked him up.

Dad : "I'm so tired, please make me something to eat" i looked at my mom

Her : "Tea is fine baby" I nodded then made my way to the kitchen while they went to the lounge.

•

•

BABALWA

Δ

I had the most peaceful sleep I've ever had in a very long time, I guess the change that is

currently taking place in my life was much needed and knowing that I'm not alone, being able to count on Natasha has made all the difference. I do not know how I can ever repay her or her family for this but I'm grateful. After showering Tasha gave me space to apply lotion and get dressed in the clothes she had laid out for me on the bed, I needed my clothes I can't expect Tash to keep giving me her clothes I'm already taking up her space with her son in her room.

As I made my way downstairs I could hear voices in the lounge so I made my way there, finding the whole family there as soon as I entered they all turned to look at me.

Mr Baartman : "Babalwa"

Me : "Good afternoon everyone"

Mrs Baartman : "I hope you enjoyed your rest, I'll organise the guestroom for you today so you

can have your own space" I quickly shook my head, I was scared of being alone

Me : "No please, I'm comfortable with Natasha and Junior"

Tasha : "Yeah mom it's fine, I don't mind"

Her : "Okay sweetie would you like something to eat so long?"

Me : "Yes please" she looked at Natasha, signaling that she should go make me something to eat.

She stood up and so did I

Mr Baartman : *clears throat* "Babalwa please remain sitted, my wife and I would like to have a talk with you" my heart started beating fast

Me : "a.. A talk?"

Him : "Yes about your current situation and with regards to your mother" I swallowed hard as I sat back down, Tasha walked out.

Me : "Is she okay? My mom?"

Mrs Baartman : "Your mom is okay, she's conscious but she has fallen into deep depression and has currently been taken into a mental institution" my mouth went dry

Me : "Me..mental insti..." I took a deep breathe in "A mental institution? I don't understand"

Her : "Well sweetie this whole thing was too much for your mother to handle, at this moment only professionals can help" tears fell down my cheeks as I nodded but I quickly wiped them.

Mr Baartman : "And with this whole thing, we think it is best you start seeing a therapist"

Me : "But I'm not crazy"

Him : "We are not saying you are crazy angel, you just need to talk to someone to help you get through this. Someone who is professionally capable of dealing with situations like this"

Me : "What about Zweli?"

Him : "Do not worry about Zweli, as long as your fathers heart still beats they will not charge him of murder but assault"

Me : "What does that mean? Could he go to jail?"

Him : "Don't you trust my lawyer capabilities?"

Me : *clears throat* "I do sir"

Him : "I'll have your brother out of jail on Monday, but I need you to see your therapist so that you can go on the stand and testify against the state which is suing your brother. Do you understand?"

Me : "You want me to tell everyone what he did to me?" I asked with my eyes looking like they were about to pop out of my skull "No I can't do that, they all going to judge me I can't no no..."

Him : "This is all we need to get your brother out

of jail Babalwa or do you want him to stay in there?"

Me : "No sir"

Him : "Babalwa this can only be a success if you get the necessary help in order to help yourself along with your brother"

Me : "I'm scared"

Mrs Baartman : "Babi baby, you need not be scared. We are here to help you and your brother, we will personally make sure that no harm is done on you or your older brother"

Me : *sighs* "Promise?"

Her : *smiles* "Yes baby, I promise"

Mr Baartman : "We promise"

-
-

ZWELIBANZI

△

Being locked up in here gave me a whole lot of time to think, truth be told I didn't want this life for myself. I did not want to be locked up in here like this. I had to be out there with Babalwa, she needed me now more than ever! I needed to be in my sons life and maybe make things right with his mother. I just cannot remain locked up in here! I couldn't !

"Kumkani Booi!" The warden shouted as he opened the cell gate. I quickly got up and walked towards the gate

Him : "You have a visitor" I nodded as he cuffed me and led me to the interrogation room.

When I got there, Iminam was sitted with tears running down her cheeks she looked like a mess. As soon as I got in she jumped to hug me but the warden pushed her off.

Him : "No touching" she wiped her tears as she

nodded.

I sat down on the chair and she did the same.

Her : "I came as soon as I heard baby I'm so sorry" I nodded "Are you okay? Where is Babalwa? Do you guys need any help? I can always land a helping hand"

Me : *sigh* "I'm fine, Babalwa is safe"

Her : "Please don't shut me out" I nodded and she sighed "You will get out of here, I know you will"

Me : "Hopefully"

Her : "Yes all you need is to be hopeful baby, do you have a lawyer?" I nodded "okay, ummm well you can always come to my mom if you need anything. If Babalwa needs anything too I'm here"

Me : "Thanks, I'll keep that in mind"

Her : *sighs* "I love you okay?" I nodded "And I

want you to know this situation you have found yourself in does not change anything, you did what you had to in the situation you found yourself in. I still love you baby" she was sincere fuck this girl was so innocent!

I stood up

Her : "Is it already time for you to go inside?"
She stood up too, I just looked at her "Baby talk to me please"

Me : "Go home" she looked taken aback by what I had just said. I walked to my warden and he walked me to my cell leaving Imi in the interrogation room.

I don't know who I want to be with between her or Natasha, I have too much going on to be thinking about relationships they will just have to wait. I need to focus on getting out of this place and getting my sister the help she needs, ensuring that bastard is locked behind bars and

that my mother gets back on track. Iminam and Natasha will just have to wait.

Insert 6

△

BABALWA

•

After the talk with Natasha's parents I kind of felt a whole lot better about this whole thing, although I was a bit scared about the part of me having to testify in court all I wanted was for my brother to come out. I mean I knew I had to do it sooner or later but I hate the thought of having to relive everything my father put me through, I feel like it is going to kill me deep inside again, I don't know how talking to a therapist will help either because he or she will not be able to erase what happened. I'm stuck with it for the rest of my life, I doubt it will ever get better but I'll do whatever it takes to fix what is left of my

family.

Seeing how the Baartman's were made me envy Natasha's life, it seemed so perfect and yes I know nobody has it easy but they are a stable family and always make sure that their daughter is happy while I on the other hand have a mother who cannot handle all that is thrown her way because of things my father did to her please don't get me started on how useless and a waste that man is! I curse the day I was born because of him! It is because of him I don't want to be alive this very moment! It is because of him my brother is in jail! It is because of him my mother, the sweet woman that she is, is in a mental institution right now! I hate him! I hate him with my entire being! I wish he could just die!

"You okay?" I looked up and Natasha's mom was looking at me.

Me : "I'm okay" she smiled, her smile was so

genuine

Her : "Don't think about it to much"

Me : "I'm not ma" she gave me the really look
"I'm just looking at your family and how happy
you guys are and then I think of mine..." *sighs*
"I just wish things were different, I wish we
could be happy too"

Her : "You know sweety no family is perfect, we
just trying to make what we have here work and
besides you can be happy without your father.
Just you, your brother and your mother"

Me : "I don't think so"

Her : "Why?"

Me : *sigh* "The damage is too great to be
undone" she took my hand into hers

Her : "I'm not going to lie and claim to know how
you feel or that I understand because I've never
been where you are currently, I don't know how

it feels to be in your shoes and what you are currently feeling but I want you to trust me when I say that it will get better and I mean that! I'm going to make sure you get the help you need because I am a mother to a beautiful daughter myself and since your mother is not well I will step in her shoes just to help and ensure that you get through this. So I want you to trust me okay?" I nodded with a slight smile, she wrapped her arms around me giving me a warm hug, I inhaled her sweet scent as I felt safe in her arms.

When we pulled out I could feel their eyes on us, Natasha and her father that is. We looked their direction and they were starring at us smiling.

Mr Baartman : "I hope you feel comfortable and happy in our home"

Me : "Yes and thank you sir, for everything" he nodded

Him : "I think it's best if we gave Zweli his space. I want you to use the rest of this day and tomorrow to think about what you want for yourself and family, it's essential that the two of you get to think about this whole thing and yourselves"

Me : "I don't want Zweli to feel as if I've abandoned him"

Him : "You both need this Babalwa" who was I to argue with Natasha's father. I just nodded "Please do not feel as if I'm trying to tear the two of you apart, but I feel this exercise is necessary at this particular point in time"

Me : "Yes sir, may I be excused?"

Him : "Yes you may" I stood up and walked upstairs to Natasha's room then closed the door, the tears fell voluntarily. I don't like this, he doesn't understand that even though they have welcomed me into their home I still felt like an

outsider!

I needed to see my brother, I'm not familiar to this environment or how they do things. I just know Natasha because she is the mother of my brothers child and I've only met her parents a few times only! So this, being in their home 24/7 wasn't easy for me. Not at all.

The door opened while I was still stuck in my thoughts and I quickly wiped my tears then looked up as I sat on the edge of the bed, it was Natasha with a sleeping Lubanzi in her arms. She laid him down in his cot then came and sat next to me quietly. We sat besides each other in complete silence, it was not awkward or uncomfortable but rather peaceful. Later on we were called downstairs for supper then I helped Natasha with the dishes and everyone went to their separate rooms.

-

-

ZWELIBANZI

△

It was now Monday, we had appeared before the judge and my bail was set at R5000.

Natasha's father paid and we drove off, I must say I was a bit disappointed to see him come here alone. Was hoping to see my little sister, I had missed her and I wanted to know how she was doing. This weekend in those jail cells made me realize that we could overcome this but I needed to be patient, patience in Babalwa seeing someone to talk to about what she is going and have patience with regards to my mother's condition and hopefully finally having our father locked up for all the sinful acts he has done. This was especially hard for Babalwa so I'd have to support and be there for her.

The car stopped outside the Baartman mansion

and I exhaled loudly, as we got into the house I noticed that it was quiet very quiet.

Me : *clears throat* "Where is everyone?"

Mr Baartman : "Babalwa has gone to her first therapy session, Lindy took her and Lubanzi is with her while Natasha went to her job interview" again I was disappointed there was nobody there to welcome me.

Me : "Uhh can we please go to the house? I need my car, a few clothes and some school essentials"

Him : "It hasn't been cleaned as yet"

Me : "No problem sir, I'll have the cleaning company come to the house when we are there"

Him : "I have a few things to go over because I'm due in the courtroom at 2, I'd give you the keys to the mercedes but you won't be able to get your car so I will just get you a cab"

Me : "I understand fully sir"

Him : "In the meantime you can get yourself something to eat in the kitchen" I nodded and he turned making his way up the staircase.

I walked to the kitchen and helped myself to what seemed like yesterday's leftovers which I only ate because it had my name on it, it was Natasha's handwriting . It's the little things she does that make me love her without even realising it. I warmed the food in the microwave and then I ate, it was absolutely amazing! After a weekend of prison food I definitely ate each and every bite of that scrumptious meal.

By the time I rinsed the dish I had used the cab was already outside waiting for me, I quickly put everything away because I did not want to leave a mess in another man's kitchen then rushed out. The cab driver had already been paid by Mr Baartman so when he dropped me off in front of the house I just walked in.

Every single door and window was shut closed, it looked like nothing happened. Someone passing by would admire this hell hole that we live in *chuckles* if only they knew. As soon as I walked into the house I made my way to my room got my cellphone and called the cleaning company. When they were done I could breath, it didn't erase what had happened but I could breath. I took a suitcase and packed my stuff then went to Babalwa's room and it was spotless! Standing by the door, the image of him shoving his dick in her mouth makes its way to mind again but I quickly brush it off and do what I had went to do that which is pack clothes for Babalwa. I packed her school uniform along with a few outfits, I did not pack a lot of stuff for us just a few because I didn't want us to overstay our welcome at the Baartman house. They've done enough already. Before leaving the house I decided to call

Iminam, she answered on the first ring.

Her : "Babe? Is that you?"

Me : "Yeah it's me"

Her : "Oh my God! I was getting worried, so you're out now? How are you?"

Me : "One question at a time"

Her : *giggles* "I'm sorry, I'm sure you are tired. I am just so happy to hear from you"

Me : *chuckles* "Yeah umm, can you come see me at the house?"

Her : "Okay no problem, I'll be there"

Me : "Thanks"

Her : "Why are you being so formal? Is everything okay my love?"

Me : "You'll know when you get here"

Her : "O-kay, see you in 30 minutes or so"

Me : "Okay bye"

Her : "Bye" she now sounded down

I didn't want to be all sweet yet I know that when she gets here I'm going to break her heart, no I couldn't. I hung up then went to shower and changed into my black puma tracksuit then sat in front of my laptop and checked my bank balance it was looking good just like every other month my account was recharged automatically with R15000 by my father's banker. In total I had R34 560 in my account, I'm not a big spender most of the money I got I would spend on gadgets, my car, Junior and Iminam.

The doorbell rang so I went downstairs and welcomed Imi inside. She walked and stood awkwardly in the middle of the lounge, I closed the door and then turned my attention to her.

Me : "Something to drink?" She shook her head nervously "okay take a sit, we need to talk" we sat down facing each other

Her : "Zweli the wait is killing me"

Me : "Okay look Mimi, I've got a lot going on in my life right now you know. This with my family is really messed up, I could go to jail, my father could die, my mother could stay in that mental institution forever and Babi could do something to harm herself. What I'm saying is I have got a lot going on in my life right now that I really need to focus on, my mother and sister need me now more than ever and a relationship at the moment is out of the equation" she took a deep breath in

Her : "Are you breaking up with me?"

Me : "I'm sorry"

Her : "Wow" she slouched back on the couch and kept blinking I guess she was fighting her tears "I can't believe this" she started fanning her face with her hands while looking up but she couldn't stop the tears from coming out "I'm

sorry" she said as she wiped them "I know this is selfish of me considering what you are going through with your family *sniffs* I guess I thought we would get through this together. That I could be there for you but I cannot force you to be with me" she sighed and kept quiet for a while before looking at me smiling and she said "It's God's plan *smiles* you, Babi and your mom will get through this I know you will."

Me : "I hope so"

Her : *sigh* "I won't lie and say I'm not hurt by your decision but it is afterall what you feel is good for you therefore I cannot stand in your way but just know that I love you so so much Kumkani! With you I've been at my happiest..." A tear fell down her cheek and she bit on her bottom lip, I wrapped my arms around her and let her cry on my chest

Me : "You didn't do anything wrong, don't blame yourself for my decision okay?" She nodded still

on my chest "just continue being a good girl for me okay?" She sniffed again then looked at me wiping her tears and I helped her before handing her a tissue from the box which was on the coffee table "you okay?" She shrugged

Her : "I should be asking you that"

Me : "I'm fine you can see that"

Her : "Kumkani... Don't do that, you don't have to be Hercules in front of me. Baby, I mean Banzi you are allowed to be vulnerable too"

Me : "I'll be fine I promise" I looked at the time on my wrist watch "I have to go"

Her : "Oh okay" she stood up and fixed her dress, I stood up and we hugged "Take care of yourself"

Me : "You too princess" she smiled took her car keys from the table then walked out.

I quickly rushed upstairs made sure I had

everything including toiletries then put everything in the car and drove off to Baartman mansion, arriving there I'm greeted by Mrs Baartman's car in the driveway, I parked behind her car then took out the 2 suitcases plus my laptop back along with Babalwa's then made my way inside the house. In the lounge it was only Mr & Mrs Baartman, so I greeted.

Mr B` : "You're back"

Me : "Yes Sir" Natasha's mom gave me a warm smile then came to hug me

Her : "Always been formal boy, how are you?"

Me : "Under the circumstances one can only try" she patted my shoulder

Her : "That's what I want to hear, today was your sisters first session. Her therapist says she did quiet well"

Me : *smiles* "Really?" I was happy hearing that

Her : "Yes but there's still a lot to be done"

Me : "I understand ma, where is she?"

Her : "In Tasha's room"

Me : "May I?"

Her : "Of course, but first let me show you to your room"

Me : "Yes please" by now it was only us downstairs, Mr Baartman had left us there and went upstairs, I'm assuming to his study.

Ma helped by carrying the two laptop bags as I carried the suitcases, showed me to my room then took me to Tasha's room and gave us privacy. I walked in and she was sitting on the bed but her back was facing the door, I got in put her stuff by the door.

Me : "Babalwa" she looked back immediately, I could see she had been crying

Her : "Bhuti!?" She quickly made to me and

crashed in my arms before letting out a loud sob

Me : "It's okay, I'm here now" I brushed her back
"I'm here little sis"

Insert 7

△

As she cried in my arms I realized how much this whole thing was taking its toll on her, she was really too young for all of this. We needed our mother now more than ever this is hurting me too, I'm also breaking inside as much as I don't want to admit it. As much as I want to act strong and be the hero for Babalwa slowly I was beginning to crumble too.

Me : "We will get through this Babalwa" I pulled out of our embrace and cupped her face "From now on its us against them okay?" I wiped her tears and she nodded "I hate seeing you like this little sis, it breaks my heart" I sighed and

got up from the floor then sat on the couch by near the door in Natasha's room. My face fell into both my hands

Don't crumble now Zweli dont! Thats what I kept telling myself but I couldn't I needed to let it all out so I let the tears flow but I quickly wiped them off roughly then starred at Babi who was sitting on the floor with hugging her knees as she rocked herself.

Me : "Babalwa"

Her : "I just want it all to be over bhuti, I want to forget please. I want to forget bhuti make me forget ndakucela..."

Me : "Babalwa" I knelt down in front of "You can't break now don't do this to me please"

She looked me straight in the eye and said "I don't want to be alive Zweli, I just wanna die"

Me : "No one is going to die here Babalwa!" I took a deep breathe in "you can't do that to me

please, we will get through this I promise you. I don't know how but we will Babi"

Her : "Zweli I'm too young for this, its way bigger than me Zwe and I'm scared!"

Me : "I'm here Babalwa"

Her : "you could go to jail and I'll be alone again. I don't wanna be alone"

Me : "Hey hey, I'm not going back there. I won't leave you again"

Her : "Promise?"

Me : "I promise" we hugged "love you sis"

Her : "I love you too bhuti"

We sat like that for a while then she went to lay on the bed but asked me not to leave so I sat on the couch and we conversed about stuff in general till she fell asleep. I was about to leave when Lubanzi woke up, I missed my little guy.

Me : "Boy boy" he smiled whilst standing in his

crib, I picked him and he wrapped his arms around my neck as he laid his head on my shoulder, I smiled to myself thinking of how much I missed this. As much as he wasn't planned, now that he was here I'd do anything for him and I'm grateful to his mother for taking such good care of him. She was just another blessing, I'm so thankful for all she's done for Babalwa. Not everyone would take on such a responsibility.

I walked out of the room with Junior and went downstairs to the kitchen, Tasha's mom was in there preparing supper, I'm surprised Natasha is not yet back home.

Tasha's mom : "Oh he is awake" she looked at him "hello boy" he just giggled and hid his face in my neck "oh because your dad is here now we don't exist? Hay e.eh" I laughed

Me : "As soon as his mom gets here I won't exist either"

Her : *laughs* "he is going to break hearts I can already see"

Me : *chuckles* "Nah I can already see him playing rugby"

Her : "that violent sport of yours? No no no, he will play golf"

Me : "That's for old men"

"So I'm an old man?" - mr Baartman said whilst standing by the door frame with a smug on his face

Mrs B : "my husband is no old man darling"

Me : *chuckles* "You guys seem to forget you are grandparents"

Him : "Hip grandparents that is"

Me : *laughs* "don't wanna get old I see"

Mrs B : "Hey! What are you trying to say about me?"

Me : "Nothing mrs B, just that you are aging beautifully"

Her : "Awww thank you Zwe, you are so sweet"

Mr B : "what about me? Am I sour?"

Her : "Even sweeter my love" he blushed, this old man legit blushed.

I laughed to myself as Mrs B handed me Junior's bottle of milk

Me : "Thank you, I'll be in the guestroom with him"

Her : "You're welcome"

I walked out of the kitchen leaving them in there, I gave Junior his bottle

Him : "Nkos" (thank you)

We walked up the staircase to the room that was allocated to me and chilled in there, we played and I forgot all about my challenges. For a moment everything was okay, all that

mattered was my son. He was happy, I watched him as he played on the bed next to me. He had absolutely no care or worry in the world and that's the way I wanted it to be. I did not want my son suffering and facing hardships early in his life.

There was a slight knock on the door then it opened and in came Tasha, she smiled as she walked in with grey sweat pants and a long sleeved white top. Her hair was wet and tied into a bun. She looked at us with a smile on her face

Her : "Hey, can I come in?" I nodded, junior quickly got off the bed and walked, okay more like ran with his arms open to his mother and she picked him up. "Somebody missed me" she kissed him all over his face and he giggled "did you miss me baby" he nodded "I missed you too boy" she walked towards the bed but sat on the edge

Me : "How are you?"

Her : *smiles* "I should be asking you that Kumkani"

Me : "Well I'm out of jail and here with my son, I can see Babalwa was well taken care of so I'm doing good now how are you?"

Her : "I'm fine just tired that's all but I'm chuffed cause you are here now"

Me : *nods* "How was the interview?"

Her : "Well I don't know, I think it went well. We will see if I get called back"

Me : "I know they will" she smiled and nodded then looked at junior who was sitting on her lap playing with my phone "You take good care of him"

Her : *smiles* "How can I not? He is the most beautiful thing that came out of our relationship"

Me : "about that..."

Her : "its okay, I understand you are with someone else"

Me : "Not anymore"

Her : "Oh?"

Me : "Yeah, I just need to focus on my family"

Her : "You guys are going through a lot so its understandable"

Me : "I'm talking about us Natasha"

Her : "Us?"

Me : "You, me and our son. Look I'm not saying lets get back together, I'm not in the space for a relationship right now but I want us to work on raising our son even better"

Her : "O-kay" she seemed confused. I was too.
"Zweli" I looked at her "are you okay? Honestly are you okay?"

Me : *sighs* "I don't know"

Her : "Talk to me"

Me : "Just feel like I'm facing this whole thing alone, I don't even know how Babalwa and I are going to get through this"

Her : "Simple, by being there for each other"

Me : *sighs* "it's hard Tash"

Her : "Zwe"

Me : "Yeah"

Her : "I know this is selfish of me but let me be there for you please"

Me : "I don't need stress right now Tash"

Her : "I love you okay? I know this is hard for, I just want to be there for you" she put Banzi on the bed then came around to my side and sat down next to me "allow me to Zweli" she wrapped her arms around my neck and kissed me, I kissed her back with so much passion. I

did not realize how much I missed her until that very moment. She pulled out and looked at me "not going to stress you, just going to be there for you" I just pulled her in for a hug

Me : "With this whole thing happening in my family I want us to have a healthy relationship okay? But at the moment we just going to take things slow you'll be there for me and I'll be there for you when you need me"

Her : "That's all I ask for" I cupped her face then pecked her lips

Me : "You look beautiful"

Her : *smiles* "Thank you" Banzi stood on the bed holding onto his mothers shoulder

Me : "Can't let daddy have his moment huh?" He just smiled "I love you guys so much"

Tash : "We love you too" she looked Banzi "say I love you daddy" she began tickling him.

Everything was just perfect at that moment.

Staying with the Baartman's was really therapeutic but it wasn't the life Babalwa and I needed, we needed to face our demons. So after staying for a week with them I spoke with Natasha's father asking for permission to leave, I mean after everything he has done it is the least I could do. He agreed, even promised to keep paying for Babalwa's therapy bill and that he would still represent me in court.

My mom's condition had not yet changed much but Babalwa and I visited her everyday after school, Tasha would come drop off supper every evening so we were basically surviving. Each and everyday had its own struggle but some days were good. With Babalwa it would depend on her sessions with her therapist, how deep they were and on what note they left things on, at times I didn't want her to go because of how messed up she would be when

she got home but she was getting better.

Things got rocky when our father was showing signs of consciousness and I was asked to go to the hospital, as much as I dreaded it I had to go.

After breakfast, I went to go drop Babalwa off at school then drove to the hospital. When I got there, the receptionist told me which ward he was in so I walked there slowly trying to think of ways in which this visit could possibly work out but I was blank and to be honest kind of scared.

I took a few deep breaths before going inside his ward, he was in there picking his food and not really eating. I cleared my throat and he looked up

Him : "Zwelibanzi" I walked closer to the bed
"come closer don't be a coward now"

Me : "What do you want? Why did you ask to see me"

Him : *chuckles* "straight to the point I see. Well for starters I want you to tell your sister to drop the charges she pressed against me then I want you to go to the police station tell them it was all lies and our family had a little dispute that's all" I looked at him in shock

Me : "You are even sicker than I thought"

Him : "Just make it easier for everyone Zwelibanzi"

Me : "Why did you have to be our father? Why are you so cruel!? She's just a kid for goodness sake, your own blood" he just looked at me unmoved "We will see you in court"

I turned and walked towards the door.

"Where are you guys going to live? Who is going to pay your fees at school? Babalwa's school fees at that expensive private school? You think you are going to survive without me? *chuckles* you are more of an idiot than I thought" - he

asked these proudly. I turned around and charged at him in anger

Him : "put your hands on me again so your charge can change from assault to attempted murder" I huffed with my hands already in a fist

Me : "know what? You're not even worth it." I walked out his ward and left him shouting my name.

I drove to the Baartman home, I had to see Tasha's dad and tell him about what just happened. I got there and rang the door bell, the door was opened by Tasha.

Me : "Hey, is your dad here?"

Her : "Uhhh no what's going on? What's wrong?"

I just looked at her and hungrily kissed her but she pulled out.

Her : "Zweli wait baby I..." I shut her up with another kiss and she gave in.

I picked her up and she wrapped her legs around my waist, I walked into the house and closed the door behind me then walked up to her room, as soon as we were in her room clothes started flying off. I yearned to feel her soft skin against mine, she stopped me as I was about to take off her underwear.

Me : "What's wrong?"

Her : "I am not on contraceptives Zwe and we both know you don't have a condom with you right now" fuck she's right "We can't Zweli"

Me : "Okay" I was bumped to be honest but she was right, we can't have another baby especially now and she knows I hate pulling out when I'm about to cum.

"Sorry" - she said softly. I looked at her and smiled

Me : "no I'm sorry" I pecked her lips, I laid on the bed next to her "where is Junior?"

Her : *giggles* "only now you ask about him really?"

Me : "hey you weren't stopping me either"

Her : *smiles* "he is at crèche now talk to me, what's bothering you?"

Me : *sigh* "Its my dad, he is just something else you know"

Her : "You went to see him?"

Me : "I had to and after today he will surely get whats coming for him"

Her : "What's that supposed to mean Zwe?"

Me : "Nothing to worry yourself about" I pulled her to lay on my chest and we laid like that quietly until she spoke up again

Her : "Just don't do anything that will result in you being in jail Zweli, Babalwa cannot handle another loss. First her mother in a mental institution then her brother in jail, it would be

too much for her Zweli so please be responsible" I didn't say anything after that I just placed a kiss on the crown of her head.

Insert 8

△

Late afternoon I left Tasha's house and went to Babalwa's school to fetch her, as I waited outside I saw her approaching the gate with some girl and they were laughing. Wow! Well this was a first, Babalwa has been in this school for 5 years now. Well she is in matric, turning 17 at the end of this year and I've never not once heard her speak of having a friend at school or taking part in any activity, whenever I'd ask she would just brush me off telling me that is how she preferred things to be. Being alone that was but let's be honest that is never healthy, one needs acquaintances or even a friend so seeing her today walking out that gate with a mate who seemed to be in the same age group as her

made me proud.

They both approached the car...

Babalwa : "Bhuti" she hugged me and I took her backpack

Me : "Lil sis"

Her : "This is my new friend Khwezi, Khwezi this is my older brother Zweli"

Me : "Nice to meet you Khwezi, you must be really special. Babalwa has never introduced a friend to me" she nudged me with her elbow and her friend giggled.

Khwezi : "Nice to meet you too bhuti wakhe"

Me : *laughs* "Babalwa do you see how you're making me seem like an old madala"

Her : *giggles* "Stop it bhuti you're embarrassing me!"

Me : "sorry keh, uhh Khwezi do you need a ride home?"

Khwezi : "No thank you, my mom is fetching me so I'm sorted" she looked at Babalwa "I'll see you tomorrow, don't forget what we spoke about neh"

Her : "don't worry I won't"

Khwezi : "Bye" she shook my hand then gave Babalwa a hug and walked towards a black range Rover with an older lady who looked a bit like her. I'm guessing her mother.

I liked her, she seemed respectful. I think she'll be good for Babalwa, she wasn't too forward and that's good because I don't want Babalwa hanging around girls who are forward and have nothing to do with themselves but boys.

I put Babalwa's backpack in the backseat then we got into the car, I looked at her and smiled.

Me : "Glad you made a friend" we both buckled up

Her : "She's nice" I turned on the car engine

Me : "You seem happier, I love the change I'm seeing in you baby sis" she looked at me while smiling

Her : "Baby steps bro bro"

Me : *laughs* "Bro bro? Really now?"

Her : "Bru?"

Me : "Babi.." I reprimanded her

Her : "Geez okay, browsky then?"

Me : "Honestly to Gowdling Babalwa" she looked at me and we both burst into laughter

Her : "Gowdling? Really Zwe"

Me : *chuckles* "Its actually an in thing now"

Her : "Lies bhuti sies"

I shrugged and drove off.

Me : "Wanna go grab a bite before we go see mom?"

Her : "Let's buy takeaways from her favourite

food outlet and take the food there then we can eat together as a family"

Me : "Good idea"

We drove to the food outlet and ordered what we needed, after getting the food we drove off to the mental clinic. I took the food and Babalwa took her backpack, she always did her homework here. We signed in then went to the visiting room where we waited for our mother. Babalwa set up the table and by the time they brought our mother the food had been laid out, she hugged each one of us then sat down.

Babalwa : "we brought your favourite mama" she looked at the food then us

Her : "thank you" she said softly then gave us a slight smile

Me : *clears throat* "mama guess what?" I said excitedly

Her : "What is it boy?"

Me : "Babalwa made a friend" she smiled and looked at Babalwa

Her : "You made a friend?" Babalwa nodded

Babi : "Her name is Khwezikazi"

Her : "That's nice my baby" still her voice was soft.

My mother is a very loud and energized person by nature, well she used to be so this woman sitting with us here wasn't my mother. She was broken just like Babalwa but with her it seemed to be something bigger than just that.

Me : "Let's eat, the food is getting cold"

Her : "Looks delicious my boy thank you"

Me : *smiles* "Thank Babalwa, it was her idea"

Babi : "I thought you would be tired of the food you guys get here"

Her : *giggles* "I am, I miss cooking in my own kitchen"

Babalwa and I looked at each other smiling, she had giggled. It's been a while since we heard the sound of her soothing giggle. I think we are making progress, fingers crossed . After eating Babalwa did her homework while mama looked at our recent pictures and videos, I had not yet told any one of them that dad has woken up. I don't know how, I feel like they are starting to recover, even though its not drastic recovery its still something to me. I feel like if I am to bring it up we are going to go back 10 steps backwards.

"Boy I thought you were with Imi" - mom said as soon as she saw a recent picture of Natasha and I

Me : "Ai mama"

Her : "Ai mama what Zwe?"

Me : "Eish"

Her : "Iminam is a nice girl Zweli, I like her and

the effect she has on you. I'm not saying
Natasha isn't a good partner or anything just
that with Imi the relationship was healthy baby"

Me : "Mama please, we are trying to fix things"

Her : "I know you love her"

Me : "A lot mma"

Her : "And Imi?"

Me : "Mama"

Her : "Zweli?"

Me : *sigh* "I want both of them mama, but I
can't now. I have to focus on us"

Her : "You can't yet you're busy with Natasha?"

Me : "she keeps me going ma"

Her : "Okay boy, do what makes you happy"

Me : "Don't you think its time you came back
home with us?" She shifted uncomfortably

Her : "Zweli"

Me : "Mama please we need you, you can heal at home. With us your kids, we should be the ones to keep you sane mama"

Her : "I'm not ready Zweli, my psycholgist agrees too"

Me : "but you are making progress ma"

Her : "Baby steps boy. I'm not ready"

"Whenever you're ready mama we will be waiting" - Babalwa said.

Me : "I don't mean to push mama, I just miss you so much"

Her : *sighs* "oh baby I miss you guys more but I feel as if I have failed both of you Zweli. Your father, oh God, I shouldn't have married that man. I should have left him, he is sick baby, a psychopath but I thought I could change him. That having you guys would make him a better man but nothing changed instead things got worse" she looked at Babalwa "I'm sorry my

baby, I've failed you. I should have protected you nana but I did not know, he injected me every night after supper claiming it was to help with my depression only to find out he was making it worse. Making me zone out even more and loose touch with the real world. I'm so sorry baby, if I could fix this I would" at this point both Babalwa and mom were in tears. My eyes burnt but I wasn't about to let the tears flow.

Mama got up & embraced Babalwa then got up and walked towards the door. She hated saying goodbye, hated seeing us leave her here so this is how we left off every night.

Me : "Mama, wait" I stood up "I have something to tell you"

Her : "What is it Banzi?" She turned around wiping her tears

Me : "It's dad" Babalwa jumped to her feet

Babi : "Wha...what about him?" I swallowed

Me : "He is awake" the room fell into complete silence then before I could even do anything, Babalwa blacked out.

•

Sorry guys I'm very tired, but I couldn't disappoint. Especially since we(the page) are currently on 1K likes.

Insert 9

△

Doc : "Everything is okay, she just had a panic attack but she will be fine when she wakes up"

Me : *nods* "Thank you" he pat my shoulder

Him : "Hang in there"

I nodded and he walked away, after Babalwa fainted I called for help and luckily the clinic has its own doctor so he could help. When he told she would be okay my heart felt relief but I was

still worried about her, if that's how she reacts now what will happen when she actually sees him no I must make sure that does not happen. She was doing so well already, we can't go back to step 1 again no no. I looked beside me and my mother was sitting on the small couch next to Babalwa's bed, brushing her hand softly. She looked so guilty.

Me : "It's not your fault mama" she shook her head squeezing her eyes shut.

Her : "Oh Zweli baby" she sighed then looked at me before looking back at Babalwa "She does not deserve all this, my poor baby Kumkani. She's young and has so much life to live yet so broken. Look at me, I can't even be a mother to my kids Zweli I'm failing you guys all because of him"

Me : "Mama please don't please"

Her : "It's true"

Me : "Its not mama, you are not failing us please stop blaming yourself because of him" I knelt down next to the couch she was sitting on

Her : "I'm sorry my boy, I'm so sorry" she wiped the tear that had fallen down my cheek "I should have left a long time ago, spared you guys the pain..."

Me : "Mama its okay, we will get through this"

"Mama" we looked at Babalwa and she was awake looking at us. Mama quickly got up and hugged her.

Ma : "Don't scare me like that again Babalwa please my baby"

Her : "Mama I'm scared" she sobbed. I just stood there not knowing what to do

Ma : *teary* "Don't be Babi, you know your brother will protect you and the police know about what he did baby so he won't be coming anywhere near you"

Her : "No one will ever be able to stop him mama, that's what he said. I'll never be safe, we will never be safe"

What Babalwa said moved something in my mother because after hearing those words she crashed on top of the chair she was sitting on before Babalwa woke up and began shaking her head like someone who was in denial then began rocking back and forth, I was taken aback by this scene, Babalwa too. We were both just watching her seemingly loosing her mind by the second.

Her : "Its okay Vuyi, its okay. Everything will be okay, just do as he says and it will be okay *giggles* we will be happy..." She rambled on and on...

Babalwa sobbed and I watched with tears running down my cheeks, no child should see their mother in that state, I was no longer angry or broken. I was now raging with wrath, I want

that man to suffer with everything in me!!

"Zweli get help" - Babalwa said still crying but I was unresponsive. I watched her every single move & word she said and just fell to my knees. I was powerless, looking at my world crumble before my very eyes. That is when I promised myself that I will be the change I want to see in my life, I just had to protect her. I had to protect both of them.

I was brought to life by two nurses rushing in a panick to my mother's rescue, I could not take it anymore I stood up, went over to Babalwa and shielded her view. She held on for dear life as we sat there rocking each other back and forth, hearing the commotion around us and the sniffs from Babi, I just starred into space. It's true, LIFE IS BIGGER THAN US. It was showing us flames, my heart had been ripped from my chest.

"what happened?" I looked back and it was my

mother's psychologist I had met her a few times.

Her : "What did you guys say to her?"

Me : "Nothing"

Her : "No no no! She was making progress something must have triggered this reaction" I just starred at her "Look Kumkani, I need to know what happened in order to help her please"

Me : "My father happened"

Her : "Your father?"

Me : "He is awake"

Her : "And?"

Me : "It upset Babalwa, she said some stuff then mama began loosing it"

Her : "What stuff?"

Me : "that we will never be safe" I said it codly

with no emotion

Her : "Ummm okay, thank you"

I looked at the chair where my mother was and she wasn't there, it was only Babalwa, Dr Fera (the psychologist) and I.

Dr Fera : "She has been taken for an immediate evaluation" I nodded "I'm needed there, you guys will be okay" I nodded again, she tried saying a few positive words of encouragement but I was not having any of it and she noticed so she left.

I looked at Babalwa who was still holding on to me tightly

Me : *clears throat* "Babalwa" she sat up and looked at me with eyes swollen from crying "we have to go home"

Her : "No we can't, he will come for us there Zweli"

Me : "Babalwa please don't be difficult, not after what happened please"

Her : "You can go, I'll stay. I feel safer here Zweli, close to mom. I don't want to go back there, its hell in there"

Me : "Then where do you suggest we stay Babalwa we have nowhere else to stay"

Her : "don't make me go back there please Zweli he will find us there, I don't wanna go there"

Me : "Babi look..."

Her : "No Zweli we are not safe!"

Me : "You are safer with me than here Babi, I need you close to me in order to protect you please. If I leave you here and something happens then I will never forgivw myself so please let's go home"

Her : "I'm scared Zwe"

Me : "I'm here little sis" she held out her pinky

Her : "Promise me" I hooked my pinky with hers

Me : "I promise" she sighed then hugged me and I hugged her even tighter "I don't ever want to loose you okay?" She nodded then pulled out.

Her : "I love you"

Me : *smiles* "I love you too sis" I stood up "Now put your shoes on so we can go"

She got off the bed and wore her school shoes, I took her backpack and handed her her blazer.

Her : "Thank you"

We walked out then signed out at the receptionist and I drove us home. We arrived there and the house was pitch black because there was no one there, Babalwa released a shakey breath

Me : "Don't be scared while I'm here nothing will happened to you"

We walked out of the car and walked into the

house, immediately turned on the lights and Babalwa being paranoid made me change the alarm password.

Me : "See nothing to worry about while I'm here"

Her : "Let's just go to bed"

I locked up with her following behind me then we went to our room, yes our room. She was too scared to sleep alone so we moved a bed from one of the guestrooms into my room because it was the most spacious and basically shared the room. She went to bath while I sat on my bed and bus sending a text to Natasha explaining that something had happened at the clinic but I would explain everything in the morning with her father because I left the house saying I'd go back seeing as he wasn't there when I had left in the afternoon. I put my phone down and Babalwa came out from the bathroom in her pajamas so I went to take a quick shower too then got into comfortable bed

wear .

Me : "Good night sis"

Her : "Night" I switched off the main lights but Babalwa was scared of the dark so we slept with the lamps on.

It didn't take long for me to hear Babi snoring, today was just a mission honestly. But from now on I need to pull my socks up, I really should consider looking for a job, need to do so much. Ensure that Babalwa gets good marks in order to get a bursary so that she can study next year, I also need to get distinctions in my modules so that the university can help with my fees. Things were about to change, well already are changing in my life drastically and the last thing I need right now is to be ill-prepared. I got out of bed and sat by my study desk as I drew up my cv and printed a few certificates of mine, well I've never worked in my life so I needed to make it look good since I don't have experience.

After drawing up my cv I made a whole bunch of copies then stapled everything and put it into my backpack.

I had to look for a job, sort out the medical aid finances to cover moms bill then I can worry about Babalwa's therapy bill myself. As much as I am grateful to the Baartman's having them pay for Babalwa and Mom's bills made me somehow feel as if I owed them something in return. I didn't feel completely free, with being the man of the house I felt like I was slacking off especially since Mr Baartman was already offering his services as a lawyer to Babalwa and I, I couldn't have him doing so much for us. He had his own family to take care of.

I got into bed again, said a short prayer then fell asleep. Since it was Friday there was no need to set an alarm because we had no school to attend the following day but when I did wake up in the morning Babalwa was sitting on her bad

already bathed by the looks of it with her tracksuit on and busy with her books.

Me : "Morning" she looked at me and smiled, I smiled back.

Her : "Morning"

Me : "You look better than you did last night, how are you feeling?"

Her : "I'm okay, how are you feeling?"

Me : "I'm fine sis, as long as you are good then I'm good" I got up from bed and went to the bathroom, brushed my teeth and splashed my face with water before going back to the bedroom "What subject are you busy with?" I asked this handing to my wardrobe looking for something to wear

Her : "Going through my History"

Me : "Oh nah can't help"

Her : *giggles* "I know" I took out my grey faded jeans and looked at her

Me : "Hey what's that supposed to mean?"

Her : "I'm just way better at History than you bhuti"

Me : "Yhuuu" she shrugged

Her : "Sorry brosky" I shook my head

Me : "Not forgetting this, stru bob" she burst out laughing at me

Her : *laughs* "You need to stop seriously" shaking her head "Need me to iron that for you?" She said looking at the white t-shirt in my hand

Me : "Yes please" I put it on the couch "What are we eating for breakfast?"

Her : "Fruit salad after last nights supper"

Me : "Sounds good to me, uuuh Babalwa" she looked at me "With everything that is going on

we are going to need to start thinking about the future and how we are going to survive, first thing in mind right now is money. We need to start saving"

Her : "No problem, you can take my savings card that dad gave me, I don't use it anyway" she looked back at her books

Me : "How much is in there?" She shrugged and gave me her phone. I went to her bank notifications, my eyeballs almost fell out "What the fuck! How long have you not used this?"

Her : "I don't use it, never have"

Me : "This is a lot of money Babi" she just shrugged

Wow okay, this is really a lot of money, we will continue saving it.

Me : "When I finish bathing please be ready, we are going to Natasha's place"

Her : "Okay"

I put her phone down and quickly went to shower, when I came out Babalwa wasn't in the room so I quickly got dressed took my backpack and went downstairs. I found her in the lounge with Imi, they both looked up

Me : "Iminam? Hey" she stood up and came to hug me

Her : "Hi"

Babalwa : "I'm going to eat in the kitchen so long" I nodded as she gave us some privacy.

Me : "You can sit"

Her : "I know you're probably wondering why I'm here but I just came to check how you guys were holding up"

Me : "Oh, well we are trying. Each day has its own challenge but we are still standing, how are you?"

Her : *smiles* "I'm okay, just worried about you and Babalwa"

Me : "We will be okay, we have each other"

Her : *nods* "I sent you an email of some notes that I made in ethics and I told your coach you're mother is sick so that you could be excused from rugby"

Me : "I appreciate that, thank you" she stood up

Her : "I'll see you around then" I stood up too

Me : "Thank you for coming, means a lot to me"

Her : "You don't have to thank me, I want to be here so yeah umm guess I'll get going" I pulled her in for a hug

Me : "Still being good for me?" She nodded with her head still on my chest then broke the embrace

Her : "Be safe okay?" She stood on her toes and pecked my cheek then took her handbag, I

walked her to her car

Me : "Bye princess" she smiled

Her : "Bye" then drove off.

I went back inside the house and joined Babalwa in the kitchen, she gave me a look as I sat on the high chair.

Me : "What?"

Her : "Aaah neks bhuti" she handed my bowl of fruit salad.

After eating we went to the Baartman house and luckily Tasha's dad was there so we went to his study and I told him everything.

Him : "Okay so firstly we are going to have to file for a restraining order to ensure that he does not come near any of you guys then once your mother is well I have to see her because I feel there's more there and if my gut feeling is right and I know it is, I will pursue her to press

charges against your father, not only will that strengthen Babalwa's case but will also give us more ammunition and an even higher possibility of him going to jail. His case of assault against you is weak, so you don't have to worry about that"

Me : "So we are safe?"

Him : "From where I'm standing? Hell yeah"

Me : "Thank you so much" we shook hands

Him : "Before I forget, your father has been taking into police custody"

Insert 10

Δ

BABALWA

•

After spending the entire day with Natasha's family, Zweli asked for us to be excused and I don't know how but he convinced Natasha's

father to let her sleepover which was great news because it would get our mind off of things. Zweli called the clinic and they told him it would be best if we gave her a bit of space for a day or two just for her to get better I guess but they did manage to calm her down and reason with her so I was happy. I no longer felt guilty because I felt as if I had pushed her to that point.

After Tasha finished packing an overnight bag for Banzi and herself we excused ourselves.

"What do you guys wanna eat for supper?" - Zweli asked as he drove off from the Baartman residence. I was sitting in the backseat with Junior while Tasha sat in the front with Zweli

Tasha : "Anything you guys want to eat I'm cool with"

Zweli : "Babalwa? Any ideas?" He looked at me through the rearview mirror

Me : "Maybe lasagne and some roast chicken, I don't know. What do you think?" he looked at Natasha and she nodded

Him : "Babe?"

Her : "I'm down baby don't stress"

Him : "Alright then lasagne it is, thank you ladies for volunteering to cook. You guys take such good care of me I can't deal honestly" we all laughed, junior too. One would swear he understood what his father had just said

Me : "And then wena? Why are you laughing?"

Him : "Hay hay hay"

Zwe : "Hay Babalwa let my son be"

Me : *chuckles* "Tash?"

Her : "Don't worry, I'm with you on this one"

Zwe : *chuckles* "Really babe? Really"

Jr : "Willy!?" We looked at each other and

laughed again

Me : "Yes Jr, Willy"

Him : "Ohhh" he nodded, like I really cannot deal with this child . He makes me so happy and boy does he like acting older than his age !

We got home and lit the place up, Zweli went to sit in the lounge with his son where they watched rugby whilst Tash and I prepared supper. She was busy with the lasagne and the roast chicken was my baby.

"You look way better now than the past few weeks" - Tash said

Me : "Really?"

Her : "Yes, I've been meaning to tell you but mom was all over you back at home"

Me : *giggles* "True, could barely keep up with her questions but I know she means well"

Her : "I'm just glad you're okay, I know you guys

are going to pull through this still standing"

Me : *sighs* "I hope so, I really honestly hope so"

Her : "Have faith, you're strong and so is your brother. Together, you two are a force to be reckoned with"

Me : "You're so motherly"

Her : *giggles* "Hau Babalwa"

Me : "It's not a bad thing, should actually take it as a complement. You just have a way of making one feel better, just like mother's do"

Her : "Awww Babalwa" she wiped her hands on the apron she had on and made her way on my side of the counter then hugged me "Thank you" she pulled out and looked at me "You're truly getting better I can see it in your actions and it makes me so happy"

Me : "I think I'm happy too actually"

Her : "Wow! Can't believe this is you right now"
she laughed "Let's get back to supper before
your brother comes here complaining about us
taking time"

Me : "Trueeee" she looked at me and chuckled
whilst shaking her head and we carried on
cooking.

When the food was almost done, I went to go
set the dinner table while Natasha wrapped
everything up then we all gathered at the table,
said grace and digged in. Junior was sitting
next to his mother eating too but he was only
eating the chicken though.

Zweli : "Thank you for the food guys, tastes
amazing"

Me : "You're welcome"

Tash : "It's a pleasure baby"

Him : "You know I love your cooking" he winked
at her and she blushed so hard, my brother had

theeee biggest smirk on his face. Wow these two I silently laughed while picking my food.

"what is funny Babi?" - Zweli asked

Jr : "Fani baba" copy cat

Me : "Oh nothing" I smiled

Him : "Mhmmm"

Me : "You two are cute thats all"

Him : *chuckles* "I know" he blew her a kiss, omg she turned pink.

Her : *clears throat* "I'm going to get a glass of water, excuse me" she quickly got up and went to the kitchen.

Me : *giggles* "Stop it bhuti, you're making it hard for her to eat"

Him : *laughs* "Whaaaaa? I'm not even doing anything" he had a sip of some juice then gave junior some "Babe!?"

Her : "Coming" she appeared with a bottle of water

Him : "Was starting to get worried"

Her : *smiles* "I'm okay"

Me : *laughs* "You guys need to stop, don't forget junior and I are still in the room"

Tash : *giggles* "Babi don't be silly"

Zwe : "Babalwa can you pass me the chicken please" I passed him the bowl with chicken and he took a piece "Thank you"

We carried on eating, after our little dinner we all went to the kitchen and cleaned up. I must say it was fun, I was feeling lighter... I don't know to explain it but at that moment my heart was at peace.

Tash : "Babe can you please make his bottle, I'll go give him a bath so long"

Him : "No problem nunus"

Tash : *laughs* "definitely not going to say anything" she held Junior's hand "Let's go boy"

I looked at Zweli as he watched them with a smile on his face, he really did love his little family and he was so good with both of them. From my point of view they were really a cute little family, with so much love and care amongst them. It makes me happy to see my brother not following our father's footsteps, he is really the total opposite of him and it made me even more proud to call him my brother. A true role model in my eyes, I hope that I too can be able to see the positive side of things even when the going gets tough and that is one thing Zweli strives on.

"why are you starring at me Babalwa?" - Zweli asked, bringing me back to life

Me : "Sorry, what?"

Him : "You're starring Babi, it's weird" he rolled

his eyes. I shook my head smiling, Zweli was such a character !

Me : "I didn't realise, sorry" I wiped the sink

Him : "Whats going on in that big head of yours?"

Me : *giggles* "Not as big as yours" he quickly poker face on me "I'm joking *giggles* lighten up"

Him : "Now tell me what you are thinking little sis"

Me : "I was just thinking about how good you are with your tiny family, you're really doing a great job with them"

Him : "I am?" I nodded "wow thanks little sis, you don't know what it means to be me hearing you say that. Really thank you"

Me : *smiles* "No problem"

He turned around and continued making his

son's bottle but then the doorbell rang, he turned to look at me.

Him : "did you invite someone?"

Me : "What? Nooo! Who could I possibly invite?"

Him : "That new friend of yours"

Me : "I didn't invite anyone Zwe, go get the door"

He put everything back on the counter and headed to the lounge, I followed behind him.

Him : "Who is it!?"

Unknown : "Kumkani open this door" it was a male voice

Zweli : "Ungubani?" (Who are you?)

Him : "Zwelibanzi Boo, open this door!" He sounded angry, Zweli looked at me

Zwe to me : "Ngu malume" (it's our uncle) I looked at him shocked

Me : "No don't open Zweli" i said whispering

"what if he hurts us? After all he is our father's brother"

Him : "We don't have a choice Babi"

Me : "Okay" I held him hand tightly as I stood behind him then he opened the door

Zwe : "Malume"

Him : "Malume? You made me wait outside of my own brothers house and all you can say is malume?"

Zwe : "I'm sorry, we couldn't find the keys. We were already going to bed"

Him : "Mxm, what rubbish is this I'm hearing from my brother that you guys are plotting against him"

Zwe : "plotting? No one is plotting anything here, he molested Babalwa!"

Him : "Molested!? That's rubbish Zweli I know my brother"

Zwe : "well clearly not enough to know that he is a pedophile"

Him : "Yey! Where is your respect? Have you forgotten I'm your elder?"

Me : "No malume its true, he..."

Him : "Who was talking to you?" I swallowed "I'm asking you a question dammit!!"

Zwe : "You are not going to walk in here and talk to her like that"

Him : "She is a child! Akazothetha amadoda ethetha" (she will not speak while men speak) he then looked at me "do you understand me?" I nodded

Me : *swallows* "Ewe malume" (yes uncle) I let go of Zweli's hand "I'm going to bed, good night(ini)"

Him : "Not before we talk" he walked to the living room leaving Zweli and I standing by the

door.

Zweli clenched his fist and jaw.

Me : *whispering* "no, don't please. You are going to get in trouble" he cursed under his breathe as he shut the door

"I'm waiting!" Malume shouted from the living room

Zweli : "I am going to dislocate that man's jaw" he charged to the living room but I pulled him back

Me : "No, no, no! Calm down please Zwe. Think of me and mom please" he took a deep breath out

Him : "Fine"

Me : "Thank you" I gave him a brief hug

"yey I don't have the whole night!" He shouted again

Me : "Coming!"

Zweli : "He is testing my patience"

Me : "Don't let him get to you" we walked to the living room

Malume : "Babalwa go get some juice for me"

Me : "Ewe malume" I turned and made my way to the kitchen.

Insert 11

Δ

KUMKANI

•

Babalwa excused herself to go get the beverage our uncle had asked for, leaving me alone with him. All I did as I sat with him in the living room was to try and keep myself in check, kept thinking of my mother and Babalwa's state of mind and what would happen if I got arrested because I'm sure now with the charge I'm

facing for assaulting my father, if I am to add on to that by beating up this man in front of me I'd surely go to prison so all I did was think of mama and Babi.

"Kumkani" - he called out, I lifted my head and looked at him.

Him : "What do you call what's happening in this family?"

Me : "Excuse me?"

Him : "You three turning against the man that puts food in your mouths, the lavish life you guys are living is because of him and now?"

Me : "Why don't you ask yourself why we would up and suddenly turn against an 'honourable' man? Huh? Did you ask yourself that? Do you even know him or you just choosing to turn the blind eye on all the disgusting things he does"

Him : "Don't patronize me Kumkani"

Me : "You know he isn't the man he makes himself out to be, you know that malume"

Him : "Even so what kind of son are you? Turning against your own father!?"

Me : *chuckles* "Are you serious right now? You are going to come in here and act like what your brother has been doing to Babalwa and heaven knows what to my mother is nothing!?"

Him : "Don't raise your voice at me boy"

Me : *laughs* "I am more of a man than you'll ever be"

Him : "Excuse me?" He stood from the couch he was sitting on and I did too

Me : "You are standing in front of me defending that spineless whimp you call a brother..."

Him : "Boy you better watch your words"

Me : *smirks* "You are less of a man than I thought you were" he glared at me and all I saw

in his eyes was rage, just then I felt his fist connect with my cheek and I stumbled back. I sent my fingers to do some inspection on my cheek and throbbing lip and it came back bloody. I chuckled shaking my head as my anger built-up

"Zweli no" - Babalwa said as she placed the beverages on the coffee table then came and stood in front of me

Her : "Remember what we spoke about please" she tried to touch my bruised face but I pushed her hand away

Me : "I'm fine" I took a glass of juices from the tray on the coffee, took a huge gulped then sat down but Babalwa & malume were still on their feet starring at me "You just going to stare at me the whole night or? Cause I've got things to do hey"

Babalwa : "bhuti stop" I chuckled and took a sip

of the juice

Me : *shaking my head* "Ja neh"

Malume : "Looks like my brother was right about you guys" he took his car keys

Me : "You came here with your mind made up about what's going on in this family already so I really don't know what you were expecting to come out of this little visit of yours"

Him : "Zwelibanzi I'm your elder dammit, give me some respect!"

Me : "Act like the elder you claim to be"

Babi : "Zwe..."

Me : "No Babalwa he can't come here and treat us like a piece of gum stuck to the bottom of his shoe, he doesn't see anything wrong with what his brother did but finds fault in us reporting him!"

Him : "Wena Babalwa you happy with your

father being behind bars!?"

Her : "I..."

Him : "You what? Huh? You are a worthless little girl, waste of sperm both of you" I couldn't handle it anymore, I charged at him and pushed against the wall but this nigga had a smirk on his face. That's when I realized Babalwa was right, I let out a sigh and let him go.

Me : "You're not even worth it, please leave"

Him : "With pleasure" he walked out of the living and out the front door.

I walked behind him and locked the door,when I returned to the living room Babalwa was no longer there. I took the glass I was drinking from and threw it against the wall then crashed on the chair. How dare he come in here and insult us! I was fuming fuck!

•

•
NATASHA

△

I could hear the racket coming from downstairs but I didn't want to meddle in family issues, it wasn't my place to do so. It suddenly went quiet and that's when Babalwa walked into the bedroom looking highly upset, she crawled on her bed and crouched into a ball. I didn't know what to do so I just climbed on the bed next to her and wrapped my arms around her as she cried silently, junior was standing next to the side of the bed that Babi was sleeping on looking at her confused.

Me : "It's going to be okay"

Her : *sniffs* "maybe he is right"

Me : "Who?"

Her : "My uncle" she sighed then turned around

to face me "I am worthless aren't I?"

Me : "What? No Babalwa.."

Her : "Then why would my own father do this to me Natasha?"

Me : "Because he is a sick man Babi, your uncle is sick too for siding with him. Nothing they say should get to you, they are a waste of oxygen both of them. Your father doesn't deserve to be called a father after what he did to you and that uncle of yours, his opinion of you does not matter, don't give him credit"

Her : "It's hard when I feel like I'm in the wrong for doing all this and finally speaking out against my father, I feel like people are against me Tasha"

Me : "Zweli, your mom and my family aren't against you. Your father's family is taking his side because he is their source of income"

Her : *sigh* "I don't know anymore, I just want

all this to come to an end so that I can move on with my life. Is that too much to ask for?"

Me : "Of course not but it will take time, you just need to be patient" she turned and gave me her back

Her : "I'm tired, just wanna sleep"

Me : "Oh okay, I'll just go check on Zweli then"

Her : "Good luck"

Me : "Is he angry?"

Her : "Fuming"

Me : *sigh* "Okay, good night"

Her : "night"

I got off the bed, wore my gown and took Junior then made my way downstairs, I passed by the kitchen first for his bottle then looked for Kumkani only to find him in the living room. I stood by the doorway and watched him as he sat on the couch with his face buried in his

hands, this whole was really taking its toll on him as much as he was trying to remain strong and the glue that kept everything together, it was weighing down on him. I walked into the living and something stung my foot.

"Ouuu!!" - I cried out and quickly sat on the couch nearest to me. I had stepped on a piece of broken glass but it was nothing big

"Baby you okay?" He placed Banzi next to me
"Let me see" he inspected my foot then stood up

Me : "I'm fine, it's just a small cut"

Him : "I'm still going to fetch the first aid kit"

Me : *sigh* "That's not necessary baby"

He just turned and walked out of the living room, came back after a while with the first aid kit and cleaned the small cut before putting a small plaster on it then pecked my lips.

Him : "I'm sorry about the glass okay?"

Me : *nods* "Its nothing big, I'm fine"

Him : "You sure?" I nodded again "What were you doing down here anyway?"

Me : "I came to check on you, Babalwa told me what happened and I kind of heard some of it but I did not want to meddle in family politics"

Him : *nods* "I'll admit I was fuming after he left but I've calmed down now *sigh* let me clean up this glass then we can go to bed"

Me : "Okay baby" he placed a soft peck on my forehead then went to go fetch a broom and scoop

Junior was falling asleep next to me so I made him lay comfortably while we waited for his father to get done, when Zweli finished he took Junior and we went upstairs with him walking behind him. In the room Babalwa was fast asleep, guess she was really tired like she said, I

fixed the bed for Junior and his father tucked him in. I climbed in bed next to him while Zweli went to take a quick shower, by the time he slipped into bed behind me I was already dozing off. He wrapped his arm around my waist and pulled me closer to him

"Good night princess" he kissed the back of my neck

Me : "Good night baby" I was slowly falling into a deep slumber when I remembered that junior didn't have a bottle for the middle of the night.
"babe"

Him : "Mh"

Me : "I didn't make a bottle for junior"

Him : "Mh baby there's a bit left from the one I made him now go to sleep"

Me : "Zweli it won't be enough please"

Him : "Tash baby please I'm tired, go back to

sleep" I sighed then got out of bed, he quickly grabbed my hand "Natasha" he switched on his side lamp and looked at me "Get back into bed, I'll go make it" that was more of an order than a suggestion so I just climbed back into bed.

He left, came back after a while with juniors flusk and a tin of milk, quickly made juniors bottle then climbed into bed next to me and switched off his side lamp.

Him : "good night kiss?" I lifted my head my head up and pecked his lips but he deepened the kiss.

In the midst of our kiss I heard something like a window breaking, I quickly pulled out of the kiss.

Me : "Did you hear that?"

Him : "Hear what baby?"

Me : "Zweli I heard a window breaking just now, what if we have intruders?" I whispered

Him : "Babe this is not the time for jokes"

Me : "I'm not joking Zwe..." I heard footsteps
"Did you hear that?"

Him : *nods* "Shhh okay?" I quickly nodded and
he got out of bed

Me : "No Zweli I'm scared don't go"

Him : "I'm just going to check what's going on"

Me : "it's not safe, just lock the door and we will
call the police" the footsteps were getting
closer and my eyes widened.

Zweli walked to the door and stood behind it as
the handle turned, I swallowed the lump in my
throat as a man stepped inside in all black and
a balaclava. He looked straight at me then
walked towards the bed, my heart was beating
so fast as if it was about to beat out of my
chest. Before I knew it Zweli shut the door and
attacked him from behind, I quickly reached for
my phone and dialed 10111, put it on loud

speaker then screamed for help. Babalwa woke up in the mist of this drama confused and disoriented, her eyes landed on her brother. All I could think of was my son at that moment in time, I took the sidelamp and unplugged it. The intruder was now on top of Zweli as I was about to smash it on top of his head...

"don't even think about it" - a voice said from behind me. I slowly turned and there was 2 more of them.

Him : "Now behave and climb back on that bed next to your son over there" the scuffle between Zweli and the guy who had got into the room first had stopped.

Me : "Please don't do this" one of them threw me on the bed and they started attacking Zweli "Nooooooo!! Stop please!" Junior had woken up and I held him close to my chest, Babalwa shut her ears and eyes. All this while Zweli groaned and pleaded for them to stop, I was scared for

my son, Zweli, Babalwa and my safety. I didn't know what to do!

I gave Junior to Babalwa I had to do something, I took the lamp and opened Juniors flask.

Smashed the lamp on one of the intruders head and poured the hot water on the other but the third caught me with a hot smack. That's when I heard the sound of police sirens. I've never been more happier in my life, all three of them quickly rushed out of the room and I rushed to Zweli's side. He was badly battered and in pain, I tried to touch him but he flinched

Me : "Sorry baby" I was in tears "Babalwa call the ambulance please!" I looked at Zweli "Can you stand?" He shook his head "Hang on please"

The police came rushing into the room and were soon followed by paramedics. I was shaken, so was Babalwa. We quickly wore our shoes and followed behind the ambulance that

Zweli was put into and rushed to the emergency unit, I just hoped he was okay. This whole thing was just too much, Babalwa sobbed next to me as we sat in the waiting area I called my dad.

Him : "Tash, baby do you know what time it is"

Me : *sobs* "They broke into the house... Zweli he... *swallows* they beat Zweli up. Please come please"

Him : "Okay, okay. Calm down, where are you?"

Me : "Melomed hospital, the one near our church"

Him : "Okay, I'll be right there. Get you & Babalwa a sweet cup of coffee so long okay?"

Me : *sniffs* "Daddy what if he doesn't make it"

Him : "Tasha, daddy will be right there keep calm please my baby"

Me : "Okay"

Him : "Keep an eye on Babalwa okay?" I nodded

as if he could see me "I'll be there in 15 minutes" he hung up and I looked over to where Babalwa was sitting and she was starrng into space.

I sat next to her and squeezed her hand.

Me : "We have to be positive, he'll make it out of this"

Her : "What if he doesn't?"

Me : "That's not going to happened, Zweli is strong. Let's have faith" she sighed then nodded.

I picked up my baby who was sleeping on the chair and held him to my chest, Zweli was going to be okay, I know he will.

Insert 12

△

NATASHA

•

After a while of waiting my dad arrived, I quickly stood up and hugged him.

"It's okay I'm here pumpkin, daddy is here" - he said as he caressed my back "It's going to be okay" I nodded with my head still on his chest, he broke his embrace then looked at Junior who was sleeping in my arms then at Babalwa

Him : "Babalwa" she raised her head to look at him "he is going to be okay, he is a strong young fella. Trust me he won't leave you hanging"

Her : "I hope so" he looked at me

Him : "Has the doctor given you any updates?"

Me : "We've been waiting here the whole time, no one came to see us or update us"

Him : "what actually happened there Natasha?"

Me : "We were getting ready for bed when I heard the window breaking, Zweli insisted on

going to check out what was happening but it was too late they were already headed for his room. That's when the intruder walked into the room we were in and Zweli attacked him from behind, I tried to help but there were two more of them daddy then they..."

Him : "Breath baby" I took a deep breathe out "Good now talk to me, what happened next?"

Me : "Then all three of them started attacking Zweli, I tried to stop them daddy. I screamed for them to stop and so did Zweli but they carried on battering him like some dog, I..." I couldn't keep it in anymore I just sobbed and so did Babalwa I guess hearing what transpired evocted raw emotions in her too.

Dad : "Girls come on now, he is going to pull through. He.. Oh doctor" I quickly wiped my tears and looked up at the doctor

Doc : "Kumkani Booi?"

Dad : "Yes we are family"

Her : "Okay well sir, your son suffered a fractured rib and his kneecap got dislocated in the midst of the physical dispute he found himself in other than that he should be okay but will undergo immediate physio therapy for his knee once he regains his strength"

"So he is going to be okay?" - Babalwa asked in a low tone, the doctor looked at her and smiled

Her : "Yes, Mr Booi is going to be okay. We have however given him some heavy meds for the pain so he is currently unconscious"

Me : "Can we see him?"

Her : "I'd like for him to rest, I'll accept visits for my patient tomorrow only"

Dad : "Even if its 5 minutes doctor please"

Her : "Unfortunately I'm going to have to say no and I'd advise your girls here to go home and

rest, they look distressed. We need you guys to be sane when you see him just to give him some courage okay?" I nodded

Dad : "Thank you very much, can we talk?"

Her : "Sure we can go to my office sir"

They walked out of the waiting area and I sat down next to Babalwa, as much as my heart was heavy that we couldn't see him I was just glad that he was going to be okay. Although I know he won't take the injuries quiet well especially with his love for rugby, knowing he can't play is going to tear him apart but at least he is going to be okay and that's all that matters.

I looked over at Babalwa and she looked relieved.

Me : "See? I told you he would pull through" she looked at me and smiled

Her : "I thought he was going to leave me like mom did" my heart sank

Me : "She didn't leave you Babalwa"

Her : "Then where is she now when we need her the most Tasha? She thinks she can't handle this but what about us her kids!? We are suffering the most here while all she cares about is herself and being ready!? Ready for Tasha huh? She wants to come out when the flames have died out? After Zweli and I have faced the music alone? I hate her for letting Zweli and I bare all the heat! She is selfish! Just like that..."

Me : "No no no! Babalwa you don't mean that"

Her : "I do" she said that looking at me straight in the eye with absolutely no emotions

Me : *swallows* "Wow... Umh I did not expect this at all, I just..."

Her : "Tash please, I don't need wise words right now. I just want my brother and all of this to be over, I'm tired. Every time I think we are taking a

step forward it feels like we take 10 back, I'm tired. I need a break too, I'm only human and this right here is too much for me."

Me : "Babalwa please"

Her : "No! Let me let it all out! All this weighs heavily on my shoulders, God has turned a blind eye and is allowing us to go through all this hurt and pain, its not fair! We deserve much more than all this! I hate my father for making us go through so much! Why couldn't he care for us like a normal father? Like how your father cares for you Tasha why can't I have that" she was starting to get emotional, no she was beyond that point and just as I had anticipated she broke down.

My father came out of nowhere and took junior so I embraced Babalwa, honestly seeing them go through all these hardships was starting to weigh down on me too. I mean these are people I care for and now just felt like life was being

really unfair.

I looked at the doorway and two policeman stood there, after Babalwa calmed down we excused ourselves so that she could go get herself together in the toilet. She regained her composure and we went back to where we had left dad and the police, they had come to take our statements about the events that had transpired.

Policeman 1 : "Let me formally introduce myself, detective Kau and this is my partner Tolashe" we just nodded.

Tolashe : "We understand what took place at the Booi residence must have been a traumatic experience for both of you but we are going to need to take both your statements about what really happened in that house"

Dad : "Before we begin with this, were you able to catch the intruders?"

Kau : "We caught 2 of them, unfortunately the other one got away but I can assure you that he will soon be found and will be in police custody all we need now are the statements of these 2 girls and once the boy wakes up we will need his too"

Tolashe : "So let's start about what happened before you all went to bed" I looked at Babalwa

Her : "Well we..." She told them every single detail of what had happened with their uncle until the point where she went to bed.

Kau : "Thank you Ms Booii, now Ms...?" He was looking at me

Me : "Baartman"

Him : "Right. Ms Baartman, we have reason to believe that you were awake when a this took place so can you take us through what happened. Step by step"

I told them every single detail of what happened,

not leaving anything out and after giving our statements dad drove us home and again. Babalwa and I shared a room, we both took quick showers then I gave Junior his bottle as he had woken up, mom came to my room and gave us both a cup of tea before retiring to bed. As soon as my head hit the pillow, I was gone!

-
-

BABALWA

△

Waking up the next day, I found myself alone in Natasha's room. I laid back on the bed as I went back to last night's events, I really didn't realise the amount of anger I had inside me until I went off at Natasha in the waiting area, I really thought I was coming to terms with everything but I was lying to myself. I was still very much

angry, angry at not only my father who instigated this whole thing but my mother too because she was failing her role as a mother to me and Zweli once again, I needed to talk to my therapist about all this in our session tomorrow.

I got out of bed and went to the bathroom, like the last time I was here Natasha had toiletries laid out for me that I could use so I took a quick bath. After a good 5 minutes I got out of the tub and drained the water, I felt kinda better as I applied lotion and felt energy rush through my body. I wanted to see my brother, that's all I could think of. I stepped out of the bathroom and back into Tasha's room and I made the bed with a towel wrapped around my body, she walked into the room as I finished.

Her : "Sorry just came to give you these" she placed an overnight bag by the door then quickly stepped out.

I quickly placed the last of her dozen pillows

then inspected the overnight bag, it was my clothes. I guess they had gone to the house, I got dressed in my puma tracksuit and sneakers then combed my hair and cleaned up after myself before going downstairs and finding the whole family waiting for me around the breakfast table.

Me : "Morning, I'm sorry for holding everyone up"

Ma : "It's okay baby, I just finished preparing breakfast anyway"

Mr B : "Yeah no problem whatsoever, I hope you slept well" I sat down next to Junior

Me : "Yes sir I did, thank you for opening up your home to me once again"

Him : "Absolutely no problem, I hope you don't mind but we went to your house, well the police were done gathering their evidence so they wanted to hand the key over and I gave them

my number last night and they called me to get your house keys and Tasha here said you'd need a few clothes so she packed for you and Kumkani"

Me : "No, thank you" he smiled and nodded

Him : "Let's eat so we can go see Zweli" I nodded with a smile on my face "finally she smiles"

Ma : *giggles* "Honey don't put pressure on her, Banzi bless the food boy" he put his hand over his eyes and whispered God knows what for a good minute then shouted Amen and so did everybody else around the table

Me : *giggles* "So you pray now"

Tash : "Say yes my boy" he just nodded simultaneously as he indulged into the Bacon strip on his small plate.

We enjoyed our lovely breakfast, Tash and I washed the dishes then we all went to hospital,

I was given the opportunity to go in first and alone. He was just laying on that bed looking to the other side.

Me : *clears throat* "bhuti" he turned to look at me as a smile crept through the corner of his lips

Him : "Babi"

Me : "Hey"

Him : *chuckles* "Aah..." He flinched

Me : "You okay?" I panicked

Him : "I'm okay, just hurts to laugh and all. You just going to stand there? Come closer" I walked closer to his bed "Smile a little I'm okay"

Me : *sigh* "I was scared and I'd loose you bhuti, don't ever do that to me again"

Him : "Hey" he got ahold of my hand "I promised you I wasn't going anywhere didn't I?" I nodded "didn't I Babi?"

Me : "You did"

Him : "So?"

Me : "I should trust you"

Him : "Exactly, I'm not going anywhere" I wanted to hug him but I was scared I'd hurt his wounded body, he looked pretty beat up. Those goons really did a number on him "is it bad?"

Me : *shakes my head* "no"

Him : "don't lie to me Babalwa"

Me : "okay just a little"

Him : "The face? Don't tell me they messed with my pretty face Babalwa I'll die"

Me : *giggles* "Really bhuti?"

Him : "Come on tell me my baby is okay"

Me : "Junior is fine actually he..."

Him : "Sis I'm talking about the face come on my girl could walk in here any minute, can't

scare her off"

Me : "You're still handsome bhuti"

Him : "You reckon?" I nodded "Thank God yhuuu"

Me : *laughs* "Melodramatic" he shook his head smiling

Him : "it's tough out here, have to always make sure I got the sauce" he pulled his face and I laughed

Me : "I'm sure Tash won't mind the scars, they do kinda work with the package"

Him : "I look badass don't I?" He smirked

Me : "Always"

Him : *chuckles* "that's what I like to hear"

"Good to see you all smiles" - Tasha's father said as he walked in with his little family, Zweli and I both looked at the doorway, his lips immediately formed a smile when his eyes

landed on Natasha and Junior

Him : "Hey you"

Her : *smiles* "Hey"

Jr : "Heyoo" (hello)

Mr B : "Yoh baby so you and I are invisible"

Mrs : "Sad truth my love"

Zweli : *laughs* "Afternoon Mr & Mrs Baartman"

Mr B : "Let me and my wife over here go buy us lunch"

Zwe : "That would be great"

Mrs B : "Good seeing you alive and well son"

Him : "Good seeing you too ma"

They walked out leaving Tash, Jr and I in Zweli's ward.

Zwe : "Baby come closer come on" she walked even closer and he pouted

Me : "Haah bhuti you can't be serious"

Him : "Don't mind Babalwa, just a peck" he pouted still and she placed a peck on his lips
"Thank you for what you did yesterday"

Her : *smiles* "I'd do it all over again if I had to"
he smiled

Him : "You don't know how much all this means to me baby, last night took the cup. Thank you okay?"

Her : "Don't thank me Zweli, I did what I had to babe"

"Zweyi" - that was junior

Zwe : "It's dad to you boy" Junior just looked at him and stretched his arms out

Tash : "Daddy can't pick you up baby"

Jr : "Zweyi!" He was starting to get cranky

Zwe : "Baby it's fine just put on them bed next to me, there's more than enough space" Tash put

jr next to his father and he cuddled even closer to him then pulled the blankets ai this boy. After that nobody could touch Zweli, no only junior could. So Tash and I made ourselves comfortable on the couch in his ward and conversed with him.

Insert 13

△

ZWELIBANZI

•

Waking up in that hospital bed, I was grateful that I lived. I couldn't bare the thought of leaving Babalwa in this cruel world cause had I passed on she would have been alone in all honesty I live for my sister and I will carry on living for her until we are both back on our feet then I'll let her spread her wings & live her life how she pleases. When I learnt about my fractured rib and dislocated knee I was in distress! I could

lose my bursary, that's something I don't need right now, not with everything that is going on but if I can't play in the big matches coming up. I might as well forget my bursary.

After spending the day with the family, I was left with Mr Baartman.

Him : "I won't lie son, looks like this case against your father is going to be a difficult one"

Me : "You suspect him to be the one behind the attack?"

Him : "In all honesty yes, he wants to push you guys into a corner so that you can back down. Your uncle was just a distraction, what we should focus on is your father *sigh* I'm going to move you and Babalwa, the house is no longer safe for you guys. I already applied for Babalwa to be home schooled for the remainder of this year, the therapist will also come to you guys instead of Babalwa having to

go to her..."

Me : "Wait are you telling me we are going to be on lock down basically?"

Him : "It's for the best Zweli, I..."

Me : "But I have school sir"

Him : "With your current impairment you can't play, meaning sooner or later you are going to loose your bursary. You will go back to school next year, by then this whole thing will be over"

Me : *shakes my head* "There has to be another way"

Him : "I understand this is a lot for you to take in but its for the best, your father is a powerful man and he will use that power trust me"

Me : "What about my mother?"

Him : "She will be with you guys at the safe house"

Me : *sighs* "Am I safe here?"

Him : "I already managed to get you guards who will stay here for the remainder of your stay here at the hospital so yes"

Me : "Thank you"

Him : "I'll let you take in everything on your own, the girls will be here tomorrow. I have to go to court, your father applied for bail. Need to make sure that its denied"

Me : *sigh* "Thank you, for everything"

Him : "Don't mention it" he stood up "Take care in here, don't stress"

Me : "I'll try" he nodded then walked out.

I sighed loudly, this is what our lives had come to . All this because of one man who failed his role as a father and a husband. Now my life comes to a standstill, plans I made for myself and future are being put on hold because of one selfish man, I felt anger burn deep inside me. I couldn't think of positive ways to look at this, no

not at all. I am going to be separated from my son and his mother for 6 months to say the least . I hate my life right now but at least Babalwa and I were going to be reunited with our mother, that for me is the only good to come out of this.

"Mr Booi" - my doctor said as she entered my ward with 2 big guys walking behind her

Her : "Your guards are here and I also came to check on you" I looked at them then back at my doctor "How are you feeling?"

Me : "Fine"

Her : "The pain?"

Me : "Going to need another dose for the pain"

Her : "Is it bad?" I nodded, I had tried to ignore it while I had my visitors but it wasn't going away "Mind if I take a look?"

Me : "Sure" she nodded as she wore her gloves

then lifted the little hospital blanket I had been covered with.

After having a look at my wounds she gave me a shot to numb the pain then I had to eat in order to drink my tablets, I decided to get some sleep. I was tired, not only physically but emotionally drained as well and I didn't know how to express that nor did I know who to turn to about what I was feeling. I didn't want to turn to Natasha nor Iminam, I did not want to seem like a weakling no but to tell you the truth this whole thing was slowly taking its toll on me too. I didn't know how much longer I'd be able to keep playing hero.

I must have fallen asleep, damn the medication they had me on was strong! A nurse was in my ward doing her morning round I guess. She helped me empty my tank, then got me cleaned up and they served breakfast and only then I could have my meds and the shot for pain.

Natasha came in as the doctor left and my girl didn't look okay at all.

Her : "Hey" she smiled, the dress she had on looked good on her

Me : "Babe" she kissed me briefly then quickly sat on the couch next to my bed "No climb on the bed next to me"

Her : "I don't want to inflict pain on your wounds"

Me : "Tasha"

Her : *sigh* "Okay" she stood up and took off her shoes then hopped on the bed carefully on my right hand side since it was my left rib that was fractured

Me : "What's wrong? Why are you upset?"

Her : "I'm not upset, how are you?" I looked at her and she quickly looked away

Me : "No look at me" she shook her head, I

sighed "Baby" she sniffed "No come on talk to me"

Her : *sniffs* "I don't want you to go Zwe" I wrapped my one arm around her and brought her closer to me

Me : "Tash" she wiped her tears and looked at me, she looked so cute

Her : "Dad told me" I gave her the 'carry on' look "about you guys having to go into hiding for safety" I sighed before kissing the crown of her head and laid back on the pillows, she rested her head on my arm.

Me : "I'm not happy about the whole thing either but your father says it's for the best, I hate the thought of being away from you and Junior but *sigh* I don't know baby. I really don't know now, this one is out of my hands, it really is"

Her : *sigh* "I know, just that this trial could take time"

Me : "I doubt we will stay in the safety house until the duration of the trial though, I mean my father would be dumb to try and inflict any harm on us because it would go back to him"

Her : " I just want this all to be over, it's taking its toll on everyone"

Me : "You don't know how much I wish for the same thing my love" she lifted her head and looked at me

Her : "I know you're trying to be strong and all baby but I think you should see someone too"

Me : "What do you mean?"

Her : "A councillor, I don't maybe all 3 of you should see a family therapist you know. To salvage what's left of your family"

Me : "I know what I need right now"

Her : "What?"

Me : "Come closer" she moved closer "you" I

whispered in her ear

Her : "Zwe..."

Me : "Don't contest please baby, it's been a while"

Her : "I know but you're wounded and you know" she signalled with her eyes that the guards were watching us.

Me : "Uhhh guys could we have some privacy please"

Guard 1 (Cebo) : "We were told not to leave your side sir"

Me : "Please, you'll stand outside the door" he gave me a slight nod and they both walked out then closed the door. I looked at Tash "We're alone now baby" I pecked her lips and she deepened it then pulled out

Her : "you sure we won't hurt your..." I shut her up with a kiss and pulled her to climb on top of

me making sure she didn't hurt the wounds. I felt a bit of pain as she sat on my lap and I flinched, she quickly pulled out of our kiss
"Sorry"

Me : "it's okay"

Her lips found their way to mine again, she was careful in the way she both touched and kissed me. Soon I felt her soft palm on my face as I rested mine on her ass, rubbing and squeezing it into my own palm, she released a soft moan and I felt my member rise. I ran my hand up and down her thigh but in no time found my way under her dress, her underwear was already dripping wet and that made my member even more harder. My lips left her mouth down her neck as I pushed her panty to the side and put my finger in her wet hole then slowly took it out and rubbed her clit.

"Kani..." - she moaned softly, she was so wet. I went for the fanny hole again but this time with

2 fingers and she gasped for air. I wanted to be inside her there and then.

Me : "Babe"

Her : "Mmhhhh, yeah. Yes?" I was still fingering her, I placed a soft kiss on her shoulder

Me : "Are you on family planning now?" I went in deeper and a little bit harder too

Her : "Ye..yees Kumkani yes baby I did" she nodded while biting on her bottom lip, this entire time her eyes were closed shut. I pulled my fingers out of her fanny whole and looked at me with lazy eyes as I took my member out of my boxers, she had already helped me get the hospital gown out of the way.

She slowly sat on my hard member and immediately her vaginal walls clung on my dick. I cursed under my breathe as I enjoy the sensation it sent to my toes, slowly she moved up and down my length while I ran my thumb

over her hard nipples that were sticking out of the dress she was wearing. Her moans were getting louder

"Baby keep it down" - I said that pinching her hard nipple and moaned as she nodded.

My hand went down to her clit, rubbing it as she rode me and it drove her crazy. She laid down on me but not really applying any pressure on my body and began twerking on me, that's when I lost it and began groaning. She went at it for a while & I felt my climax coming as I had a firm grip on her waist, as soon as I felt my sperm cuming I quickly pulled her up so that I don't cum inside her. I don't trust those contraceptives, they are not a 100% certainty. We took a minute to regain our strength then she turned to look at me

Her : "I love you"

Me : "I love you too" she smiled and I gave her a

soft peck before she got off the bed.

Her : "Going to get a paper towel"

Me : "Okay" there was a roll not so far from my bed she got that cleaned herself up then cleaned me up and made sure I looked presentable again then kissed me before sitting down on the couch next to my bed. "Fuck, its not easy trying to get it on while a half impaired body"

Her : *giggles* "You'll be in good shape again, don't stress about it"

Me : "Then you'll see how much I really miss you"

Her : "I can't wait" I winked at her and she winked back

Me : "Babe can you get me steers please" she checked the time on her wrist watch

Her : "Okay, anything else?"

Me : "Juice please"

Her : "Mixed berry?"

Me : "I mean like duuh"

Her : *giggles* "just making sure" she stood up
"am I still presentable?"

Me : "Come closer, let me fix something" she
moved closer to the bed and I pulled her in for a
kiss "I love you princess"

Her : *smiles* "I love you too" she went through
her bag and handed me my phone "Iminam has
been calling you"

Me : "Oh?"

Her : "I didn't answer it so you might want to
give her a call back"

Me : "Thanks babe" she nodded then walked out

I checked my phone and I had messages from
Imi asking if everything was okay and that she
was concerned about me so I just called her

back, she answered after a while

Her : "hello?" It sounded like she was sleeping

Me : "hey, am I disturbing?" There was some fidgeting then she answered

Her : "Zweli?" I guess she was checking the caller id "uhh no no, its okay. I've been trying to get ahold of you"

Me : "Yeah, something happened so I didn't have access to my phone"

Her : "Are you okay?"

Me : "Other than my dislocated knee and fractured rib, I'm okay"

Her : "What!? What happened?"

Me : "was attacked but I'm good now"

Her : "oh my God Zweli! How can you be so casual about it!?" She sighed "I'm sorry for shouting just that I've been so worried about you"

Me : "I know but you don't have to"

Her : *sigh* "I can't help it Zwe..." We both went quiet

Me : "Mimi"

Her : "Yeah"

Me : "You're not going to see me for a while"

Her : "I don't understand, what do you mean?"

Me : "I'm not coming back to school until next year" she went quiet

"Zwe..." She said softly after a while

Me : "princess"

Her : *sigh* "baby what's really going on?"

Me : "Babalwa, mom and I are in danger"

Her : "Its your dad isn't it?"

Me : "Yeah" she sighed

Her : "I will keep praying for you guys"

Me : "Please do, how are you?"

She began telling about what was happening at school, the rugby team and we basically spoke about everything, at the end of the call she insisted that we prayed and I agreed but instead of praying with her I listened to her praying for me and ended the call on a light note. She brought peace to my soul. Imi and Natasha both had their own special roles in my life, I was planning on keeping both of them hopefully in the end marry both of them but that we will have to wait and see if they agree to.

Insert 14

△

ZWELIBANZI

•

After the call with Imi I felt a bit more lighter. As I laid in that hospital bed, lost in the little fantasy world my mind had now taken me to,

Junior came inside my ward running whilst giggling and Babalwa came soon after him running out of breathe, he quickly hid next to my bed.

Her : "Junior seriously!" She took a deep breath in "Hi bhuti"

Me : *smiling* "Hey" I looked at Junior who was trying to climb on the bed but failing dismally then looked at Babi "Could you help him..."

Her : "Yeah sure" she picked him up and he quickly threw himself on me

Me : "Aaah boy" Babalwa held him back a bit and he looked at me in concern as my face showed the pain I was in, he put his hand on rib and softly caressed it

Him : "Isungu?" (What he meant to ask was does it hurt? But he's pronunciation wasn't all that good) I nodded "Sowwi vah" (sorry neh)

Me : *smiles* "Okay boy" I looked at Babalwa

"You gave him candy didn't you?"

Her : "It was just a little, I didn't know he was going to be such a handful"

Me : "Since when don't you know how Junior gets when he is on a sugar rush?"

Her : "I'm sorry, it won't happen again" she sat down on the small couch

Me : "Who dropped you guys off?"

Her : "Well Tash's dad assigned a driver to me so yeah we came here, where is Natasha? She left the house early in the morning, I thought she'd be here with you"

Me : "She went to get me lunch, you two ate before you came here right?" She nodded

"Zweyi ina" - Jr said as he handed me his shoe

Me : "No boy boy, put your shoe on"

Him : "A.ah!" I gave him a sharp look and he slouched back on the pillows behind him

"Zwe..." - Babi called out for me

Me : "Yeah" she cleared her throat so I looked up at her direction

Her : "Bhuti ndicela uxolo" (I'm sorry big bro) I cocked my eyebrow

Me : "Why are you apologising? I'm not mad about you giving him sweets its chilled"

Her : "Not that, I'm asking you to forgive me because you now have to put your life on hold because of me"

Me : "Oh that" I slouched back on the pillows too "Don't be sorry"

Her : "I can't not be Zwe"

Me : "Non of this is your fault sis"

Her : "Can't help but feel as if it is"

Me : "Its okay, we are family. I don't hold any of this against you Babalwa, you know that and I'll do anything to get us out of this mess so

please do not feel like you are at fault here. Its dad not you"

Her : "Zwe"

Me : "No I'm not going to allow you to feel like you caused all these changes"

Her : *sighs* "I don't know how I will ever thank you"

Me : "By getting better and showing me all this was worth it, I want to see you live your dreams and becoming what you've always wanted to be"

Her : "I'll try"

Me : "That's all I wanna see, you trying to get through this"

"Molweni" - Babalwa and I both looked at the doorwa, there she was standing in a denim skirt with her white vest and black jacket matched with her black nikey

Me : "Mimi" she stood nervously at the doorway

Her : *clears throat* "I know I'm not supposed to be here but I thought I'd and see how you're doing"

Me : "Uhhh yeah, come in" she looked at Babalwa and smiled

Her : "Babalwa, hey" she walked closer to us

Babi : "Hi"

Her : "How are you holding up? How are the exam preparations coming along"

Babi : "I'm getting there, so far my head is still above the water"

Her : "Good, you have my number if you need any help with Science" Babalwa nodded, couldn't help but notice a drop of attitude from her towards Imi but I ignored it. She then looked at Junior

Her : "Hello Banzi"

Him : "Heyoo" she looked at me and smiled

Her : "Big guy, how are you feeling?"

Me : "A bit of pain every now and again but other than that I'm good, you good?" She nodded, she was so awkward I guess she could sense the vibe Babalwa was giving her.

"Kani you'll never guess..." - she stopped in her tracks as soon as her eyes landed on Imi then she looked at me.

Her : *clears throat* "Sorry, didn't know we had company. I brought the food you asked for" she walked towards the bed and gave me the takeaway before taking her son into her arms "hey baby" she pecked his cheek "Why are you so sticky" she said that using a bit of her saliva to get the sticky substance that was on his cheek off "No man who gave him sweets?" She looked at me

Me : "Come on, why would knowing how he

gets"

Babi : "Aaah guys, now you going to crucify me.
I said I was sorry"

Tash : "Iminam"

Imi : "Hi" Tash nodded before sitting down at the edge of the bed and entertaining our son, fuck this was awkward! Imi just stood there in awe taking everything in and I guess putting one & two together about what was going on between Natasha and I then she swallowed & turned her gaze unto me "Well *clears throat* it was nice seeing you" she looked at Babi "And you too Babalwa not forgetting you Tash but I think it's best I get going" she looked at her wrist watch "yeah, I should get going. I have a class in 30 minutes"

Me : "Thank you for coming"

Her : *chuckles* "don't think I should have but ummm yeah, you're welcome" she hugged me

briefly then touched Babalwa's shoulder "Wish you guys all the best" she was hurt I could tell.

Me : "Mimo"

Her : "I have to go" she quickly walked out of my ward. Tasha got up from the edge of the bed and picked up her bag too

Tash : "Bye Zwe"

Me : "Thought you'd spend the day?"

Her : "I have an assignment to finish"

Me : "Oh?" She kissed my cheek then bid farewell and I was left with a mute Babalwa "Why were you cold towards Imi?"

Her : "I wasn't"

Me : "Babalwa, don't test me do you hear me?" She nodded "Iminam is not your age mate siyavana?" (Understood)

Her : "Ewe bhuti" I sighed as I dialed Imi's number and tried calling her phone but she

hung up on me

`Please calm down, just let me explain please princess` - sent the text on WhatsApp, it didn't take long for my phone to beep

Her : `Now I finally understand why you've been shutting me out` she sent another one

`you really had me fooled Zweli but I'm a big girl I'll be fine. Good luck with everything`

I tried to call her but she hung up on me again so I texted her

Me : `Okay fine, I'll let you calm down but I'll call you later and you will answer my calls Iminam` she read but didn't reply

`princess` she blue ticked me again

`you know I hate it when you ignore my messages Imi please don't make me angry` sent. My phone beeped

Her : `can I have my space please? We will talk

later`

Me : `okay Mimo`

I was about to put my phone away but it rang and it was her

Me : "Babe" Babalwa looked at me then plucked in her earphones

Her : "Zweli why do you have to do this to me?" She had been crying I could tell by her voice

Me : "Mimo..."

Her : "I don't understand Zweli you told me you couldn't be in a relationship right now but you're with her" she sighed "Or is it me you don't wanna be with?"

Me : "Baby..."

Her : "Don't baby me now Zwe please"

Me : "Okay I'm sorry"

Her : "I want answers Zwelibanzi"

Me : "You'll understand someday princess"

Her : "are you being serious with me right now?"

Me : "as a heart attack"

Her : "Can you stop being playful this is serious dammit!"

Me : "Are you talking to me like that?"

Her : *sigh* "ngyaxolisa (I'm sorry) it's just that..."

Me : "It's okay, just know I love you"

Her : "Then you wouldn't do this to me Zweli"

Me : "And I love her just as much" she went quiet then I heard her sniff "Mimo"

Her : "You are being a huge prick right now Kumkani! Don't you care about my feelings? You're being so insensitive!"

Me : "By being honest with you?" She went quiet again, my doctor came into my ward "Listen

Mimo I have to go"

Her : "Don't you dare hang up on me
Zwelibanzi!"

Me : "I know you're not talking to me like that"
silence "Good, I'll see you tomorrow but we will
talk later"

Her : "I'm not coming there again" she hung up. I
looked at the doctor

Dr : "I didn't know you had a visitor Mr booi, I
want us to go check your knee today. See if the
surgery was a success" I nodded. Babalwa
stood up

Her : "I have to go for my session, I'll see you
tomorrow" I nodded "I love you"

Me : "Love you too" we hugged briefly then she
left.

After about an hour of the doctor having an x-
ray done on my knee and all the other

necessary procedures that needed to be done I was back at my ward and I ate the cold steers that Tash had bought me earlier. When I finished eating I decided to call her.

Her : "Kani"

Me : "Hey, still busy?"

Her : "No, I actually just finished and gave junior a bath"

Me : "Oh, what are you guys doing?"

Her : "Well we are going to eat then lock ourselves in my room, I'm quiet tired. What are you doing?"

Me : "What could I possibly be doing?"

Her : *giggles* "I don't know Zwe... How are your wounds?"

Me : "Same"

Her : *clears throat* "Baba"

Me : "Mh.."

Her : "About earlier, I have nothing to worry about. Right?"

Me : "No you don't"

Her : "Good, cause I'd hate for us to fight Zwe. You know I'm trying not to be that nagging girlfriend again"

Me : "I know baby and thank you"

Her : "Have to go, Junior is being naughty bye... Junior!" She hung up.

Natasha was going to go ballistic on me when I propose this whole thing to her but that's something to worry about later! Right now though I had other things on my plate.

The day finally came for me to be discharged. Mimo was still very much angry at me, well she refused to visit so I let her be but that did not mean I had given up on her, I sent her a

heartfelt messages and explained to her that I wouldn't be able to contact her. She replied with a simple I love you too text and that she'd wait for me to come back to my senses because I had clearly lost them if I thought she would agree to sharing me with Tasha or any other woman for that matter before wishing me well.

I said my goodbyes to my son and Tash although it was heartbreaking for me seeing her cry it had to be done. I was driven to the house by a driver and escorted inside only to find mama and Babalwa already there. My guard helped me get settled on the couch and then left the room.

Me : "Mama" they were sitting in silence even the tv was off.

Her : "Hello boy, I heard about what happened mntanam. Nxese" (my child, I'm sorry)

Me : "It's okay mama, I'll get better, how are

you?"

Her : *smiles* "Dr Fera says I'm getting better"

Me : "Wena how do you feel?"

Her : "I'll be fine when my kids are fine" Babalwa stood up and walked out, mama's face fell.

Me : "I'll fix it don't worry"

Her : "She's angry at me baby"

Me : "I'll talk to her"

Her : "No boy, I have to do it. She needs to hear it from me"

Me : "I don't want a repetition of last time mama please, just let me talk to her first then you can talk to her or I'll be here when you do"

Her : "Aren't you hungry? Tasha's father has been so good to us" she stood up

Me : "Yes I know ma"

Her : "I hope you guys have shown gratitude"

she walked into the open plan kitchen

Me : "Ewe mama" I took my phone out

Her : "I have a session with Dr Fera at 16h30 so I'll make supper now because normally after the sessions I have to do introspection then take my meds which make me sleepy so I won't be able to cook"

Me : "I'm sure she will make some sort of change to your routine I mean this is not the clinic, you're with us now and we need you"

Her : "Oh baby I know"

Me : "Can you cook my favourite please"

Her : "Anything for you my boy"

I texted Babalwa on whatsapl and she said she just wanted to sleep, that she didn't wanna talk but I should wake her up when mama was done cooking because she was going to take a nap and I just said cool. Then put my phone away, I

couldn't make contact with anyone from back home cause of it being possibly traced.

Although my father had been denied bail, Tasha's dad said it would be better this way because he was more livid now than ever and there was no telling what he might do.

- unedited

Insert 15

△

BABALWA

•

After the scrumptious meal my mother cooked and I will admit I missed her cooking, I gathered the dishes we had used to eat while mama was still having a session with her psychologist and washed the dishes then went to bid farewell to Zweli because I was off to bed.

Him : "You okay?" I nodded "Babi..."

Me : "I'm fine bhuti, I just want to be alone"

Him : "If you need anything"

Me : "I know, I'll call on you but you should go to take your meds and go to bed"

Him : "I'm just going to wait for mama to finish up" I nodded and attempted to walk away but stopped when he spoke up again "Please don't be so hard on her, she needs us and we need her too. Please Babalwa" I stood still then turned around to face him with a fake smile

Me : "Good night bhuti"

Him : "Undimamele phof?" (Are you even listening to me?)

Me : "Ewe bhuti" he sighed

Him : "Good night Babalwa" I nodded and made my way to the bedroom which I had been assigned to.

As much as this was not home, I liked it. I felt

comfortable here, I guess with all that had transpired at the Booi mansion I felt a bit suffocated in that space but here I'm at peace. I don't know but I feel lighter, with my mom here I kind of feel a bit of mixed emotions. I can't help but blame her for what happened, I don't know. I just feel that she as a mother could have done something to prevent the events of molestation that I went through in the hands of her husband but then again she claims she did not know what was happening. Sigh, I don't know how to feel but I'll discuss this with my therapist tomorrow.

I took out my nightdress and gown then walked to my bathroom where I took a bath just to relax my body before I get busy with my books for the rest of the evening. After the long relaxing bath I made myself comfortable at my study desk and began studying before being disturbed by a slight knock halfway through my

revision.

Me : "Who's there?"

"It's me baby, can I come in?" - it was my mom. I stood up and went to open the door for her

Me : "Mama?"

Her : "Can I come in?" I nodded as I moved out of the way, my guard was standing right outside my door so I closed the door "I hope I'm not disturbing your study session"

Me : "It's okay, I was going to take a breather and get a cup of coffee so you're not disturbing"

Her : "Oh okay *clears throat* I want us to talk my baby" I swallowed "let's sit down" she held my hand and pulled me to sit on the edge of the bed with her.

Me : "I don't think I want to have a talk mama" my heart was pumping and my palms were starting to sweat cause of my nerves, I don't

think I'm ready to hear what she has to say

Her : "I have to do this for you, for myself and our relationship as a mother & daughter *she sighed* I know this isn't easy for you so you will just listen to me baby" I nodded "I don't even know where to start Vuyelwa" she let go of my hands and wiped hers on her long skirt that she was wearing, I guess her palms were sweaty from the nervousness too.

Me : "I just want to know what made you stay even when you saw signs of him being bad for you and your state of mind"

Her : *sigh* "Okay, I was diagnosed with depression at the age of 16, it's something I've battled with all my life baby and sometimes well most of the time I was in mental clinics because of it. I struggled to deal with it but when your father came into my life, he brought light into it baby *she smiled* for the first time I was happy, genuinely happy even my

psychiatrist was impressed with the improvement I showed and she reckoned that he was good for me well even I saw it. We got married when I was 21 and I was already pregnant with Kumkani, life was still good even after I gave birth to him then we had you and my pregnancy with you had a lot of complications well due to stress because your father was barely home. He was never home until I had to get an emergency c-section when I was only 28 weeks pregnant with you, I was stressing knowing that my life wasn't in order, I still have flashbacks of him telling me to abort you after we found out you were going to be a girl but I never listened. I was determined to have you baby, I was excited to have my own little princess but he was stood by his word of not wanting a baby girl. I thought that maybe that would change when you came into this world but everything just went down south, I fell into depression and the doctors weren't hopeful

that you'd make it. No one came to see us in hospital, your father never came to see us not once and it broke me because it had sunk in that he really did not want you and it scared me knowing I had brought you into a world with a father who wanted nothing to do with you. After being in hospital for a month we were discharged and we went home. I arrived with your father in the lounge playing a friendly rugby game with your brother but stopped as I walked in with you..."

-
-

VUYISEKA

Δ

He looked at me then baby Babalwa who was in my arms.

Him : "What is this Vuyi?"

Me : "Baba I..."

Him : "What did I say about this child Vuyiseka!?" He was fuming and I held Babalwa even closer to my chest

"Tata theni shouta umama?" (Daddy why are you shouting at mommy?) It was Zweli

Him : "Zweli go to your room now!" He roared and my boy ran quickly with tears in his eyes, I just stood in the middle of the lounge with my tongue tied. He looked at me with his chest going up and down with each breathe he took. "Why must you make me a monster Vuyiseka?" I just stood there tongue tied "Ndiyathetha dammit!" (I'm talking to you) I jumped again this time waking Babi up

Me : "Xolo sthandwa sam (I'm sorry my love) but I couldn't do it, I could not get rid of her baba please. She's our child just like Kumkani"

Him : "What don't you understand Vuyiseka? I

can't father a daughter" my heart sank as I looked at him and then at Babalwa who was awake but just starring at me, she was a sweet child. I don't know how he expected me to get rid of her, I had already fallen so deep in love with her that I couldn't even help myself "Fuck man Vuyi!" He kicked the table causing the glass of juice that was on it to fall.

Me : "Sthandwa sam please stop, I..." He held his hand up signaling for me to stop talking and I did, he walked over to me and held out his arms "Lwando please"

Him : "I just want to hold her Vuyi" I sighed then handed Babalwa over to him.

He just stood there looking at her as she made her heart warming baby sounds and a tear fell down his cheek, he looked up and I wiped his tear then he looked at me.

Him : "she's a beautiful little girl but we can't

keep her my love please just understand please baby"

Me : "No Lwando ha.a" I took her from him "I'm not giving up my child no"

"Vuyi" he said in a low tone I shook my head and sat on the couch in attempt to breastfeed her.

Me : "You didn't even come see me at the hospital"

Him : "Sthandwa sam"

Me : "No don't call me sthandwa sam, if you loved me you would have been there baba. I needed you but you failed me as a husband and failed Babalwa as a father"

Him : "I can't father her Vuyi"

Me : "Yes you can" he sighed, took his car keys and walked out of the house then I heard his car ignition raw before he drove out of our yard. I looked at Babalwa "Daddy loves us baby, he's

just going through some things but soon we will be a family pumpkin" I pecked her forehead then breastfed her.

After doing so I made my way to Zweli's room, I got there and my boy was sleeping on the floor with his rugby ball next to him. I placed Babalwa on the tiny couch so that I could tuck Zweli into bed then I went to the nursery that I had prepared for Babalwa got a brand new blanket placed her on my back and cleaned around so that it could be hygienically clean for her. When I was done I laid her down and went to the main bedroom and cleaned before taking a quick shower it was quick because Babalwa's cries reached my ears while I was under the shower so I quickly got out and attended to her. As soon as she felt my hands pick her up she kept quiet.

Me : "Mommy is here baby, for now I'm all you have but daddy will come around. I'm sure he

will"

To be honest, I don't know what was going on with Lwando, I don't understand where this whole not having a daughter thing was coming from but he was adamant about it. Although I had hoped seeing our newborn daughter would soften his heart it didn't. I made supper and dished for Zweli and I, we ate with me helping him because his father was taking time getting home until we finally retired to bed. He never came home, days passed then it was a week and it was starting to take its toll on me, I needed him. He was my sanctuary, boy wouldn't stop asking where his father was but Babi was peaceful. My emotions were all over the place even started pulling away from Babalwa and she sensed it, always crying but it didn't bother me at all. I'd attend to her when her brother pestered me about her screams. I couldn't understand what was going on with me, one

minute I was in love with my daughter the next sigh, everything was going down hill.

"Can't you hear umntana uyakhala!?" (The baby is crying) Lwando shouted as he picked up Babalwa from the bed

Him : "I'm gone for a week and everything is mess already, you said you wanted her!" I just starred at her "Vuyi I'm talking to you"

"Tata!" He ran towards his father and jumped onto him.

Him : "Kwedin" he picked him up with his free arm then walked towards me and handed me Babalwa "Breastfeed her she's hungry, stop starving her. You said you want her so act like it"

Me : "i..there's no milk coming out of my breast, I can't breastfeed"

Him : "Since when" I shrugged "Take care of the child Vuyi"

He walked out of the room with his son, I got up with Babalwa and went to the kitchen where I made her bottle which she sucked for dear life.

Me : "I'm sorry nana, I don't know what's wrong with mommy but I'm sorry" I cried as I fed her.

"we can keep her" - Lwando said as he sat on the bed next to me

Him : "I'll try my best, I have my demons but I've been getting help" I kept quiet "Are listening to me? Baby are you crying?" He pulled me close to his chest "I'm sorry, I'm willing to try. I'll change for our family"

Me : "I think my depression is back" he kept quiet for a while then spoke up

Him : "We will get through this together"

And he did, he made sure I was seeing my new psychologist, that I was taking my meds and that our family was okay. Everything was okay, he even started bonding with Babalwa. Who am

I kidding, he loved both of his kids and we were a normal family I couldn't be happier but as the kids grew older their father changed. Lwando was starting to pull away, the only person he really cared for was Kumkani and when he started misbehaving his father sent him to boarding school and everything at home turned sour, he changed completely and my health was deviating. Everything was just a mess and I failed to be there for Babalwa, her father was emotionally unavailable and that's the time he had began abusing me and that knocked me down even further I had to be admitted at the mental clinic after that nothing was the same till this day but I had hopes that he would change again. That never happened it just got worse, my prayers to God fell on deaf ears, I was so wrapped up on fixing my marriage and the meds that I was being pumped with day in and day out that I missed the signs of what was happening in my home. I failed Babalwa, the

same daughter that I had insisted on keeping, I failed her.

Me : "I'm so sorry Babalwa, we are here today because of me. I failed you guys, I failed my role as a mother dismally baby and I'm so sorry" she sobbed in my arms and I sobbed with her.

Insert 16

Δ

BABALWA

•

Me : "I'd like to be alone" she broke the embrace and looked at me

Her : "Baby..." I shook my head

Me : "Please just leave my room ma, I need space" she got up

Her : "Ndixolele mntanam" (forgive me my child)
i nodded

Me : "Good night mama" I took off my gown and got under my covers, when I heard the door open & close, I raised my head to see if she had walked out and once I saw she was gone I sobbed all over again

I cried myself to sleep that night, what she had told me was a lot to take in and to be honest I really didn't know how to feel anymore. I was confused now more than ever.

Waking up in the morning I went to take a long bath and cleansed my face, the swelling from the crying I did last night went down just a little. When I was done I just applied lotion on my now wrinkled skin because of the long period I spent in the tub but I did not mind, I wore my pair of grey tights and an oversized white t-shirt, combed my hair which was now in curls into a neat bun, after finishing up I wore my bedroom slippers and made my bed. Which I always forgot to do because my mom spoiled Zweli

and I, she did everything for us but made sure I learnt how to cook. Lol crazy I know but wow I love that woman with my entire being *sigh* thinking back on it now, she did all she could for me and Zweli, even with her depression she would try to put aside how she felt to mother Zweli and I although one could see the cracks she still tried to play her position as best she could. I shouldn't be blaming her, its not her fault.

I can't believe I have been so inconsiderate and selfish, being cold towards her even though she does not deserve it. I love her so much, yes a lot has happened but she is here, I can't blame her for all my father has done.

I got up from the edge of the bed and fixed my now wrinkled duvet then walked out of my room and made my way to the kitchen, Zweli was sitting on the high chair by the counter while mom dished up for him.

Me : "Good morning" they both looked at me

Zwe : "Morning sis"

Ma : "Morning baby, how are you?"

Me : "I'm fine mama" I answered as I opened the fridge to get some juice, I got myself a bottle and drank it with them looking at me.

Zwe : "Uhhh Babalwa" I took the bottle away from my mouth when I felt my thirst had been quenched and looked at him "Are you okay? Mom told me"

Me : "I'm fine Zwe and mom, I'm okay."

Ma : "Baby don't shut us out please"

Me : "Ma like I said I'm fine, it happened there's nothing we can do but move forward now" I went to sit next to Zweli and mama dished for me too then handed me my plate of food
"Thank you"

Her : *smiles* "it's a pleasure"

Me : "You guys don't have to worry about me, I'm okay. I'll have a talk with my therapist about everything in my session today but worry not, I don't blame you ma and I want to apologize for the cold shoulder I've been giving you. You didn't deserve, nangoku (even now) you don't deserve it, I'm thankful for all you have done for me" Zweli looked taken aback and mama was already in tears

Her : "oh my baby" she made her way around the counter and came to give me a hug "I love you so much Vuyelwa" she pulled out and cupped my face "thank you"

Me : *smiles* "I love you too mama"

Her : "You don't know how happy I am to hear that" she pulled me into another hug and kissed my cheek repeatedly

"okay mama I think she gets it now" - Zweli

Mom : "Don't be jealous Zweli" she pulled out of

the hug and looked at Zweli who had just taken a mouthful of bacon "Mama loves you too boy" he shook his head chewing and mama kissed the side of his head, that's when his lips formed a smile.

Me : "Awww momma's boy" he shot me a stern look

Mama : "Babalwa no"

Him : "Yes mama tell her hau, no Babalwa and can I have some more bacon please mommy"

Me : *laughs* "Ai wow" I gave him some from my plate

Him : "Thanks Vee"

Ma : "Okay eat up, Dr Fera is coming. She asked that you guys join me in my session today" She was looking at Zweli and as expected his face changed to a cold one, he shook his head "Zwe..."

Zweli : "anything but that"

Her : "Just this once please my boy"

Him : "Aaah mama sorry but you know me and I don't need to talk to a shrink, I'm fine"

Her : "Zwe it's for all of us please"

Him : "No mama, sorry" he took his crutch and got off the chair, picked up his plate and walked to the lounge, ma sighed and sat down on the highchair next to me.

Me : "Xolo Vuyi wam" (I'm sorry my Vuyi) she looked at me and smiled

Her : "You'll do it?" I nodded "Thank you Vuyelwa" she sighed again "Fera said the session together as a family would help all of us and I am worried about Zweli, how this is affecting him and how he is bottling everything up"

Me : "I'm sure he will come around"

Her : "I hope and pray he does" she looked at my plate then me "Eat up, you have lost weight" I looked down at my body then back at her with a frown on my face

Me : "No I haven't"

Her : *smiles* "I'm your mother, I wouldn't lie to you"

I just smiled and ate my food, after breakfast I washed the dishes and used the time before my therapist comes in the afternoon to study in the lounge with music playing through my earphones, Zweli watching rugby and mama who was reading her bible. I felt content, scared but at peace with how things were.

-
-

ZWELIBANZI

△

Mama wouldn't stop pestering me about the whole family session thing with Dr Fera so I ended joining them as much as I was dreading the whole process it wasn't what I thought it would be and I could see how much it meant to my mom. She looked happy to have us there as emotionally dragging as it was, her psychologist reckons the session was worth it and would help with my mom's road to recovery as well as us as a family.

Babalwa was positive, she spoke positivity lately and here I was miserable because my life had come to a complete standstill. Mama and Babalwa were making progress while I was stuck in the same place or so I felt, my knee and rib were coming along nicely. I could do a few exercises but that's it, I had nothing else. All I could do was wake up, watch tv and exercise while ma had her sessions and read her bible, while Babalwa had her sessions and studying in

prep for exams I was miserable.

I had just come out the shower, so I just wore my simple track shorts with a hoody and went out to the lounge using my crutch, the doctor advised me not to put pressure on my knee although it was getting better yes me applying pressure on it would mess with the recovery process and I'll be back to step 1. There were voices coming from the lounge and by the sounds of it, it was Tasha's father and I was right. I walked into the lounge with him, mom and Babalwa in the lounge talking.

Me : "Good morning" he stood up

Him : "Zweli" we shook hands "How are you?
How's the knee?"

Me : "I'm good, healing slowly but surely" we sat down "how are you and the family?"

Him : "We are okay, Junior is naughty as ever and Tash well she misses you but that's about it.

My wife sent her greetings"

Me : "Oh, so they can't even visit?" I was lonely, I hate being cooped up in this house! I felt like I had no control over my life. Seeing Tash and Jr would really lift up my spirit

Him : "We spoke about this Zweli" I sighed and nodded "I'm here to speak about the trial" I swallowed and looked at mom then Babalwa who both looked nervous

Me : "what about it?"

Him : "Well as you all know, we're going to court on Monday"

Me : "But it's Friday today"

Him : "That I know yes but Monday we will be putting our case before the judge and also hear from your father whether he pleads guilty or not"

Me : "But we all know he is guilty"

Him : "He could plead not guilty and cook up a whole different story which is why I want us all to be on the same page when it comes to this case and I want us all to understand the delicacy of the issue at hand so I ask that no-one changes their story. I'm not planning on losing this case"

Me : "we want him behind bars so we wouldn't do anything to jeopardize our chances of winning this case"

Him : "Great so I want us to go over everything that led up to this point again"

Ma : "is that really necessary?"

Babi : "yeah I mean we've went over this before"

Him : "You guys are going to have to prepare yourselves because you will be hearing about this everyday and judging by your Father's status you guys won't rest until this case is over"

Me : *sigh* "We understand"

Him : "Good, so we can start with you Mrs Boo!"

Ma : "Vuyiseka please"

Him : "My apologies for appearing insensitive ma'am" she nodded "We can start"

•

Note - had quite a hectic day yesterday so I couldn't reply to your comments. Don't think I'm neglecting you guys, you know how much I love interacting with each and everyone in the comment section.

Insert 17

Δ

ZWELIBANZI

•

"we have gone through the evidence presented to the court, the two sides have presented their

cases now before I bring my verdict forward I would like to say that this was a very difficult case but what we have to keep in mind here is what this young girl went through at the hands of her father. Yes the accused has presented evidence of mental instability and that has been taken into account but that does not change the trauma the defendant has been exposed to and with all this in consideration, the accused has been sentenced to 15 years in prison for the molestation of Babalwa Vuyelwa Boozi. 5 years for the harassment and break in he orchestrated upon his son and daughter plus 10 years for the abuse of his wife. That's my judgement" - with that the judge stood up.

There was whispering and chatter all around me but I had zoned out, he was really going to prison I know I should be happy but my heart was broken, he is still my father.

"Zweli" - my mother called out for me and I

zoned back into life. The courtroom was now empty just us and Mr Baartman. I stood up and shook his hand thanking him.

Him : "Since the house and the company is in your name, you guys will not suffer much. That company is worth a lot of money so you guys can go to school next year."

Me : "We won't go back to that house"

Ma : "Baby are you sure?"

Me : "Yes"

Mr B : "That's okay, you guys can stay at the penthouse for as long as you may need. There is no rush"

"Zwe!" - someone shouted waking me up from my nap. I opened my eyes only to be met by Babalwa.

Me : "What?" She handed me her phone, I checked the screen and Natasha was on hold.

"Tash?" I looked at Babalwa and she walked out of my room giving me privacy

Her : "Zweli are you serious right now? I have been trying to call you and you have been ignoring my calls"

Me : "No baby I..."

Her : "Don't lie to me Zweli! You said we would go out today, just you and I"

Me : "Fuck! Baby I forgot I'm sorry" I checked the time on my wrist watch "I will come fetch you okay, give me an hour"

Her : "An hour!?! You're already late Zweli!"

Me : "Stop screaming in my ear Tash! I'll be there in an hour geez" I hung up and got off my bed.

Ever since the end of the trial I've been cooped up at home, everything was fine I just didn't see the use of being out there while my life wasn't

yet sorted. I didn't want to go back to doing B/A I was now thinking law, criminal law especially after the experience we have been through as a family I wanted to do something in the law stream and not only that but I had money which I received monthly from my Father's company which was now mine but I did not really know what to do with it yet. I'm not really a business minded man and if I was to run it I fear I'll run it to the ground so I had someone step in as CEO but I was kept in the loop as the owner and major shareholder. We decided to rent out the house, we used that money to keep us going monthly and the money from the company we were going to use to pay for both Babalwa and I's fees.

I called Babalwa to come fetch her cellphone then took a quick shower and got ready for my date with Natasha, we will just have dinner since it's already late. I was in my black tight

formal pants with a black shirt but I hadn't buttoned it all the way up. On my feet I had a pair of black loafers with simple gold details on it and a subtle gold chain just to finish off the look, I combed my upper cut neatly and wore my rolex, privileged kids with a messed up home hey . I sprayed two puffs of my polo cologne and I was ready. I made my way to the lounge, mama and Babalwa were sitting there

Me : "Hey ma"

Her : "Hello bo...heeee and then, where are you going?"

Babalwa : "He is going to Natasha"

Me : "Aaah Babalwa mama asked me mos"

Her : "I'm just saying"

Ma : "Where are you guys going? You look so nice baby"

Me : "Thank you ma, I'll just take her out to eat

at a restaurant"

Babalwa : "You smell nice too"

Me : "Are you trying to say I normally don't?"

Her : *laughs* "no come on"

Me : "It's a new Cologne do you like it?"

Her : "Love it"

Me : *smiles* "Thanks sis but I have to love and leave you guys now, I'm already late and she's mad so bye"

Ma : "Get her flowers"

Me : "Okay ma, good night guys" I rushed out the door with my car keys and cellphone in hand.

I quickly went to buy her a bouquet of flowers then drove to the Baartman mansion. I rang the bell a couple of times before she finally opened the door not looking impressed with me at all.

Me : "Baby"

Her : "Zweli" Jr appeared behind her and jumped in front of me I handed Natasha the bouquet of flowers then picked up Junior

Me : "I'm sorry baby, I took a nap and I guess I overslept but I'm sorry" she nodded and moved away from the door letting me in "You look beautiful my love"

Her : "Thank you"

Me : "Where are your parents? We need to go"

Her : "They had plans this evening Zweli, that's why I've been blowing up your phone the whole day because they could only stay with Junior in the afternoon!"

Me : "Don't raise your voice at me Natasha" she breathed out "I said I'm sorry didn't I? It's not like I did it intentionally" she starting tearing up

Her : "I just really wanted us to have some alone

time for a change" I pulled her closer with my free arm

Me : "Don't cry, you're going to ruin your make up" I kissed her forehead "Go put your flowers in a vase somewhere in your room then we can go out for dinner okay? I'm sure Junior will behave, right boy" I looked at him and he nodded, I looked back at Tasha "Now go do your touch ups then we can leave okay?"

Her : *nods* "Okay, I'll pour you some juice and make Junior a bottle" I nodded and went to go sit in the lounge with Junior.

He grabbed some of his toys and gave them to me so I had to play for a while. Tash brought the juice then went upstairs to her room after a while she came back with a small purse in hand and a jacket for junior. She had changed the baby blue dress she had on earlier and was now in a black body hugging dress that was over the knee and simple strap heels with her hair loose.

I stood up

Me : "You look amazing baby"

Her : *smiles* "Thank you" she looked at Jr
"Banzi come" he made his way to his mother
and wore the jacket.

Me : "let's get going, his car seat is in the car so
you don't have to bring the one from yours"

Her : "Okay we can go"

We walked out and she locked then we made
our way to the car, I opened the passenger sit
door for her then buckled Jr into his car seat
and jogged to my side.

Tash : "So where are we going?"

Me : "You'll see" I was driving out of their yard
now

Her : "A hint maybe?"

Me : "Babe it's just a few minutes that you must
wait"

Her : *giggles* "Okay fine"

I parked the car at the parking bay and we made our way to the restaurant with me carrying Zweli and holding Tash's hand, she was all smiles. I had taken us to her favourite place, they had a free table when we got there luckily so we had our dinner and Junior surprisingly behaved throughout with no hassles.

Tash : "Thank you so much for this Zwe" she pecked my lips "Means a lot to me and I'm sorry about my attitude towards you earlier"

Me : "Anything for you princess, just get that attitude in check"

Her : "I know daddy" she looked at Jr "Someone is sleepy"

Me : "Okay I'll get the bill then we can go" she nodded and picked Jr up from his seat placing him on her lap so he could lay his head on her chest.

I quickly got the bill and paid then we made our way out, I took over from Tash cause he had fallen asleep on our way out I saw Iminam and she saw me too. She looked heavily pregnant and when she saw the shock on my face she quickly looked away, she was with her mom but her mom didn't see me. I didn't want to cause a scene so I just walked to the car and drove Tash home with questions running through my head.

"babe you okay?" - Tash asked

Me : "Huh? Yeah yeah, I'm fine"

Her : "Are you sure? You've been quiet since we left that place, is something wrong?"

Me : "No babe I'm fine" I placed my hand on her thigh and squeezed it "I'm okay" she smiled at me and I did too then focused back on the road.

I'm fucked! Really, I know that child is mine. She looked ready to pop fuck!!

I packed the car in front of Tasha's house and helped her with Jr but I didn't stay long I just greeted her parents and left, as soon as I got home I went to my room and called Iminam.

Her : "Hello?"

Me : "Hi, it's me Zweli" she kept quiet "Imi? *sigh* I'm sorry, can I see you tomorrow please?"

Her : "You're back and you didn't even think of calling me Zwe" I kept quiet "If you're not going to talk I'm gonna hang up"

Me : "How far along are you?"

Her : "6 months going on 7" I took a deep breathe out

Me : "So the baby is mine?"

Her : "Yes"

Me : *sighs deeply* "Okay, can I see you tomorrow?"

Her : "No Zweli carry on like you've been this whole time, forget about me. I'll be just fine"

Me : "Iminam please, please"

Her : "Zweli I said no!"

Me : "Baby I just wanna talk please" quiet "Okay I'll come by tomorrow around 1 in the afternoon"

Her : "Good night Zweli" she hung up on me.

I tossed my phone aside and laid back on my bed, I don't know how I'm going to deal with this. Natasha is going to freak out on me but she's gonna have to understand it happened way before we got back together. I got up and stripped then went to go shower & retired to bed naked.

When I woke up in the morning I bathed and went to the dinning room for breakfast, mom was already there.

Me : "Morning"

Her : "Boy, what's wrong?"

Me : "Nothing ma" I sat down, she poured me a glass of juice

Her : "Last night didn't go as planned?"

Me : "It did, well sort of" she handes me the glass of juice "Thank you"

Her : "You're welcome now talk to me, what happened that has your spirit down so early in the morning?"

Me : *sigh* "I saw Iminam"

Her : "I thought the date was with Natasha"

Me : "It was, I saw her when Tash and I were leaving the restaurant"

Her : "Now what's wrong boy? Was she with another guy?"

Me : *chuckles* "She's pregnant ma" she looked

at me then put her fork down "Yes, I called her as soon as I got home and she confirmed it, the baby is mine"

Her : "Zweli why are you so irresponsible mara he? Why don't you learn from your mistakes? You have no degree to your name but you're busy making babies"

Me : "Mama..."

Her : "I don't know what to do with you anymore, I don't know really Zweli so tell me what to do that will make you focus on yourself and bettering your situation without bringing another child into it Zweli!"

Me : "Mama please"

Her : *sighs* "How far along is she?"

Me : "She's almost due"

Her : "heeee! Hay I don't know what's up with you youngster's today, Zweli don't you know

what a condom is"

Me : "I do ma but it happened and the baby is almost here so please just help me"

Her : "The trial ended a month ago Zwe how don't you know that she is expecting?"

Me : "I didn't really contact her"

Her : "so you telling me you haven't spoken to that girl since we left?" I nodded and she smacked the side of my head "yaz wena Zweli" she stood up "I'm going to lay down"

Me : "Xolo mama" (I'm sorry)

Her : "Sorry won't fix this Zwe"

She walked out of the dining room leaving me all alone at the table, I didn't even have an appetite anymore. Babalwa walked in and greeted I greeted back, she asked about my and shrug her off and left her to eat breakfast on her own. I fucked up!

Insert 18

△

ZWELIBANZI

•

As the afternoon approached I got more and more nervous, I honestly didn't know what to expect or what in the world I'm going to say. I fucked up no doubt about that but I was going through my own demons and I just didn't think honestly, I didn't want the drama of entertaining both Iminam and Natasha. I was going to concentrate on Tash well until yesterday *sigh* what's done is done. I just have to face the music now, I started the car ignition and drove out our yard. I first stopped by some shops, I didn't want to show up there empty handed. I know she probably won't even accept what I'm getting her but she'll see I'm trying right?

I went into the store and got her some white

lillies as a peace offering, her favourite candy and a takeaway from steers because she loved their burgers and chips then drove off to her house. I parked my car outside and called her, she took a while answering but she eventually did

Her : "Zweli"

Me : "Hey, how are you?"

Her : "I'm fine just experiencing a bit of heartburn but I'm fine"

Me : "Oh okay, I'll get you something for that tomorrow"

Her : "Okay"

Me : "I'm outside, can I come in?"

Her : *sigh* "Wait I'm coming"

Me : "Okay" she hung up.

I stepped outside the car and waited for her, after a few minutes she came out wearing a

white maternity dress with fur-slides, she looked beautiful to be honest but this wasn't the appropriate time to bring that up. I stood up straight as she approached the car.

Me : "Hey"

Her : *clears throat* "Zweli what do you want from me?"

Me : "I know you're mad but please I just..."

Her : "I'm not mad at you Zweli"

Me : "You're not?" She shook her head

Her : "I'm over this now, I'm not going to run after you Zweli. You're with Natasha and I accept that" I swallowed

Me : "Mimi"

Her : "Don't please, you are welcome to play your part in the life of the twins but that's where it ends" I cleared my throat

Me : "Twins?" She nodded "wow that's... That is

amazing" she just starred at me, she was really not going to make this easy for me "Can I take you out?"

Her : *sighs* "Zweli I just said..."

Me : "I know princess, but please I just want us to talk please"

Her : "Fine"

Me : *smiles* "Thank you, you look beautiful by the way"

Her : "Thanks, I'm gonna go lock up. I'll be back"

Me : "Okay wait" I opened the passenger seat and took out the items I got her "I got you these"

Her : *smiles* "Thank you but keep the takeout I'll eat it in the car" I nodded smiling, handed her the lillies along with the treats I got her and she walked into the yard and came back after a while with a bottle of water & cellphone in hand

"We can go" I opened the passenger seat for her then walked over to my side and drove off to the beach.

We sat in the backseats with the doors open, she was busy eating the food I brought her

Me : "So twins?" She nodded "Do you the gender yet?" She swallowed

Her : "They're girls"

Me : *nods* "So hard to believed"

Her : "Yeah well what do you expect"

Me : "I know I've been selfish, I've just been going through the most and in the process started thinking about myself only and I'm sorry Imi. I know me apologizing doesn't take back the months you spent alone going through the motions of this pregnancy without me the person responsible for it but I'm not going to be absent anymore I promise you that, I'll be here every step of the way princess I promise"

Her : "Don't make promises you can't keep Zwe"

Me : "I won't abandon you or the kids Imi"

Her : *sigh* "That's just words to me"

Me : "And actions will follow" she was brushing her huge belly "may I?" She nodded and I placed my hand on her tummy and they were kicking, very strong kicks too. I smiled "Are you sure they're girls?"

Her : *giggles* "Positive" I placed my head on her tummy

Me : "Hey there, I know you don't know me but it's daddy" there was a strong kick and I laughed looking at Imi who was all smiles "Do they always kick like this?"

Her : "not as strong as the one they just gave me now but yes, they barely give me a break"

Me : "Can't believe I have missed out on so much, I'm so ashamed of myself"

Her : "You didn't know so don't feel guilty, you are here now and you'll make up for lost time *sigh* I know when you left, you and I weren't on good terms but I hoped that when you came back you'd try to make amends with me but you didn't.."

Me : "I.." She shook her head

Her : "It's okay, you did what you felt was good for you"

Me : "I just thought you wouldn't want anything to do with me and I had no idea about the pregnancy Imi.."

Her : "I know, I just feel so mad that you weren't here Zweli. I know its selfish of me but I do"

Me : "You're not selfish at all, its okay to feel like that. I'm just anxious about what your parents must be thinking"

Her : "They know about you going under witness protection, they are just disappointed like I am"

that even after the case you haven't really tried to fix things between us"

Me : "I'm sure your father hates me even more now"

Her : *sighs* "Just show him that you'll take care of his grandkids, thats all I want from you"

Me : "What about us?"

Her : "there is no us Zweli"

Me : "But princess I already told you..."

Her : "I know and I already told you that there is no way I am going to share you didn't I?" I nodded "So stop"

Me : "I'm not going to give up on what I want Iminam, I want you in my life"

Her : "And I will be but only as the mother of your kids" I shook my head

Me : "I want more than that"

Her : "I think you should take me back home now"

Me : "But we are still talking"

Her : "I'm not going to talk to you about anything if it doesn't concern our kids Zweli"

Me : *sigh* "Okay fine, so you'll stay at home next year?" She nodded "I'm sorry that your life is being put on hold"

Her : "It's for the girls so I don't mind *sigh* I have to live for them now, do what is best for them and going to school next year isn't an option. I won't cope, I'll go the year after"

Me : "Okay, well I'll go back and get that degree so I can take care of you guys"

Her : "Good, now can you take me home? My back is starting to ache a little"

Me : "Oh I'm sorry, I'll bring a pillow next time. Just for you" she blushed but tried to hide it

"come move to the front seat" she got off and I cleaned up the back seat and threw away the dirt at a nearby bin then closed the doors and got in front with her

Her : "I'm kind of cold so can you turn on the heater"

Me : "But its not even..." She gave me the don't even dare look "Okay" I turned on the heater after rolling up the windows "Do you need anything before I drive you back?" I was driving out of the parking bay now

Her : "No thank you"

Me : "No weird craving I should no about?"

Her : Just beef biltong with some chillie on it"

Me : "Oh thats reasonable"

Her : "But it gives me heartburn"

Me : "Okay I won't buy it then"

Her : "No buy it Zwe, I'm just saying it gives me

heartburn but you can still get it for me"

Me : *chuckles* "Okay I'll get you your biltong and some milk to soothe your chest okay?" She nodded smiling

Her : "May I?" She had her phone in hand with the aux cable in the other, I nodded "great stuff"

She played Phora's album, Yours Truly Forever. I don't know if she was trying to send me subliminal messages but I got the vibe and she must know I'm not about to give up on her anytime soon. I dropped her off in front of her gate.

Me : "I'll come in when I have my mom with me so that we can talk with your parents and all"

Her : "Okay"

Me : "See you soon, I'll call you later just to check on you"

Her : "don't wake me up Zweli"

Me : "Don't worry I won't call at ungodly hours"

Her : "Okay"

Me : "Thank you for today, I appreciate it" she nodded smiling and tried to open her door but it was locked

Her : "Kumkani open the door please"

Me : "Can I get a hug first?"

Her : "Stop with the games"

Me : "I promise you it's just a hug please" she turned around and looked at me "is that a yes?"

Her : "Just hug me already" I smiled and embraced her, her scent was still the same and I took it all in "let go" I nodded still with my arms hooked around her "Zwe.." She said softly and I kissed her neck then pulled out of her warm embrace

Me : "I'll come fetch you tomorrow okay?"

Her : "What for?"

Me : "Just be ready, same time different place"

Her : "O-kay" I pulled her towards me and kissed her forehead

Me : "I miss you already"

Her : "Open the door please" I unlocked then stepped out and opened her door

Me : "Sweet dreams princess"

Her : "And stop sweet talking me" I nodded smiling "goodbye Zwe"

Me : "Go inside so I know you're safe"

She smiled and walked inside then I got into the car and drove off to Tash's house. I didn't want to go in so I just called her & told her I was outside, she came out in a few minutes and stepped into the car with Jr in her arms.

Her : "Hey" she pecked my lips "Didn't expect to see you here today" I took Jr from her

Me : "It wasn't planned but I just had to come"

Her : *smiles* "Well I'm happy to see you" I nodded "is everything okay"

Me : "Everything is fine *sigh* but we need to talk"

Her : "Talk? Talk about what?"

Me : "You remember Iminam right?"

Her : "Yes, what about her?"

Me : "she's pregnant" she fell back on her chair and swallowed "and yes they are mine"

Her : *clears throat* "th..they Zweli?"

Me : *sighs* "Yes, twin girls" she placed her hand on her chest and a tear fell down her cheek "It happened before you and I got back together babe, I didn't cheat on you and please don't cry in front of Junior" I wiped the tear that had fallen down her cheek. After while of silence she finally spoke up

Her : "this hurts so much" swallows "I wish I

never met you Zweli"

Me : "What?"

Her : "I regret being with you"

Me : "Are you serious Natasha?"

Her : "don't get me wrong, I don't regret my child but if I could go back in time. I wish I never met you"

Me : "baby you don't mean that"

Her : "I do Zweli, all you do is hurt me!!"

Me : "Don't raise your voice at me Natasha you know how much I hate that, especially in front of our son please"

Her : "I don't care!"

Me : "Natasha"

Her : "No Zweli, I didn't sign up to be your baby mama"

Me : "You're more than that Tash and you know

that"

Her : "I was under the impression I'll have a family but things changed as soon as the kid came the way you switched lanes its obvious that you was gasing me. Asking me to abort, a part of me that's unborn even my disappointed mother said I had her support while the father who planted the seed was too immatured. You just wanted a hit and run like this was some kind of sport, you damn coward and why did I have to remind every single time that you are a damn father? Or feel like I was doing too much for asking you for money just to support a spitting image of you. You helped a little in the begin but what else did you do? That's why I'm barking at you right now, you act like taking care of our child is a favour nigga for me its a lifestyle! Tell me how you think its alright how I'm taking care of your child all by myself, pushing around a heavy stroller all by myself,

having to carry it up some steps without no help and having to loose a day at work without no pay cause the baby got sick and the dad isn't there! Maybe that's why I'm wilding, I'm putting food in your childs tummy and clothes on your child's back and I can never do nothing for myself cause every penny that I make is spent on everything that your child has while you're looking fresh! Or what do you think posting pictures of your kid on gram means you doing a good job at being a childs dad? I could care less about you and your new bitch, if you think I'm jealous one bit then boy you stupid! How do you think you're going to take care of two more kids when you're failing Jr?"

Me : "I didn't sign up to be a baby daddy either! I was under the impression that you were trapping me, we already had mad problems as a couple girl why would you think we were fit to start a family!? You're the one who forced this

child into a broken home, a situation where the mom and dad don't get along it feels like the love is out and the hate is strong but my kid is too young to understand why he's father was gone or never there as much as I'd really like to I mean it's hard when your baby mama is so spiteful and her mom don't really like you. This child right here is a spitting image of me, you shitting on your kid when you shitting on me. Can't you see you speaking bad about me in front of our child is basically telling him that he's half evil? I don't even know how I put up with this shit, I'm doing everything I can to be there for my kid. I can't lean on my mom for support that's crazy, she spent her whole life tryna raise me now for me to start over and make her help me with a brand new baby nah Tash. She's put in her work and she deserves to be lazy and I'm tired of how you damn manipulate me now, how every time you're mad I can't see my child, I think I understand why

niggas turn into deadbeats now and I'm trying my best not to be but honestly this back and forth I'm doing with you is making it hard for me and I'm going to keep it real with, sometimes I don't even come see Jr cause I don't want to deal with you & your petty tantrums. Pressing me about money like you don't know money doesn't grow on trees and I'm tryna get it! And you know I'm going through my own shit Tash! But no you have to put pressure on me!"

Her : "Zweli.."

Me : "I'm done talking Natasha"

Her : "I was just.."

Me : "You always do this when things don't go your way, go and bring up the past! Like you don't know why I was acting like that back then *sigh* I'd like to get home if you don't mind"

She took Junior from me and got out of the car, I drove off.

Insert 19

△

ZWELIBANZI

•

I got home and parked my car inside the garage but stayed in there thinking about what had just transpired my life is a mess honestly. I can never get a break, one thing gets fixed and another breaks! Why can't I just ever have things my way or am I asking for too much, not that I even said anything to Tash about sharing me but damn after tonight I think I can forget it . I stepped out of the car and walked into the house, mom & Babalwa were having supper in the dinning area

Me : "Molweni" mama just nodded

Babi : "Ewe" I sat down across Babalwa

Mama : *clears throat* "Where have you been

the whole day?"

Me : "Ma?"

Her : "I asked where have you been imini yonke Zwelibanzi?" (The whole day)

Me : "Bendiyo bona u-Imi mama" (I went to go see Imi)

Her : "What did she say?"

Me : *clears throat* "We are expecting twin girls ma" the table fell silent, even Babalwa stopped eating and I kept my head down

Her : "Kanti Zweli don't you learn? After Lubanzi did you not learn a lesson mntanam?" (My child)

Me : "I didn't plan for this to happen ma"

Her : "Well it has happened now so what are you going to do? You tell me how you're going to fix this? Twin girls Zweli?"

Me : "I'll make a plan mama"

Her : "What plan Zwelibanzi?"

Me : "I'll make use of the money I get from the company" I looked up at her and she breathed out

Her : "And her family? You know they are Muslim Zweli"

Me : "I know mama, her father is a strict Muslim but it has happened. We will see when we go there what he says"

Her : "I hope for your sake he does not demand of you to marry his daughter Zweli. Babalwa please pass me the juice baby" she passed me the juice then took the empty plate in front of me and dished for me too then handed me the plate of food

Me : "Thank you" she just smiled and ate her food.

We finished supper in silence, after the long dragging supper mama collected everything

with the help of Babalwa and went to the kitchen. I stood up and went to my room locking the door behind me, put my phone in the charger then stripped and took a long bath cause I was tired as fuck! After my bath I disposed the water and cleaned the tub then wore my boxers and got under my bed covers without moisturizing. I grabbed my phone and dialed Iminam's number

Her : "Zwe"

Me : "Mimo, you good?"

Her : "I'm good, you okay? You sound down"

Me : *sighs* "I'm good just tired, mom is being really hard on me about this whole pregnancy" I wasn't about to tell her about my fight with Natasha

Her : "Oh?"

Me : "Yeah umh, was just checking up on you though. Are the girls still as energetic as this

afternoon?"

Her : *giggles* "After the bath I took they've calmed down, think they are sleeping which means I must sleep"

Me : *chuckles* "Okay, good night then"

Her : *yawns* "Bye"

I hung up and laid back on my bed thinking about Natasha, I really didn't like how we ended things off earlier . I got up from my bed and wore my sweats, grabbed my phone and keys then walked out of my room. I passed by the kitchen, ma and Babi were still there

Me : "Mama, I'll be back"

Her : "Okay Zweli" she turned to look at me "Aren't you going to put on a T-shirt or something" I looked at myself and I only had pants on

Me : "Forgot"

I rushed back to my room grabbed a hoodie then rushed out and drove off to Tasha's house, as soon as I parked outside I rang her up but she wasn't answering her phone, the last thing I wanted was to go knock at this time of the night. I tried again and she finally answered

Me : "Please come outside, please baby" she hung up. I stepped out of the car and waited for her, she only came outside after some minutes had passed. As soon as she stood in front of me I could see she was crying so I embraced her.

Me : "I'm sorry baby, I'm so sorry" she sobbed in my chest "I shouldn't have spoke to you like that, I was just angry hearing you say all those things made me angry but I'm sorry Tash. I'm really sorry my love" I kissed the top of her head and cupped her face then kissed her "I'm sorry okay?" I wiped her tears "Can we get into the car?"

Her : "Okay" I held her hand and we got into the backseat.

Me : "I know you're still angry at me about how I acted back then when you fell pregnant, I was still a kid baby and you know how I was like back then but I'm grown now and I'm here for you and Junior am I not?" She nodded "Talk to me please baby"

Her : "I don't know what you want me to say, you're having a baby I mean twins with another girl. What am I supposed to say? Congratulations"

Me : "Tash please stop being petty please. I didn't cheat on you, it happened way before we gave it a shot"

Her : "That doesn't make it any less painful Zweli!"

Me : "I know baby and I'm sorry that once again your heart is breaking because of me but I didn't

plan for her to get pregnant. I wouldn't do that to you intentionally you know that"

Her : "I'm tired of this Zweli"

Me : "You're tired of us? Baby please don't say that, I'm here right now that should show you that I care and I love you so please don't start with that right now"

Her : *sigh* "I'm sorry about earlier, I just... I just don't want to share you Zweli and I'm forced to because you're going to have twins with her. I guess it hurts me knowing you're going to have a child with someone else, I thought I'd be the only one to bare you kids but I'm sorry I threw a tantrum. I just love you so much Kani"

Me : *sigh* but you fail to respect me Natasha, a simple thing as not raising your voice when you talk to me"

Her : "I was angry and hurt Zweli"

Me : "I get that but you know how much I hate it

when someone raises their voice at me
Natasha, you can make your point without
shouting and worst of all in front of our son
Tash"

Her : "I'm sorry I just..."

Me : "No don't, you need to work on your anger.
I hate the way you always throw tantrums when
things aren't going your way now I'm the bad
guy for being honest with you or would you
rather have that I did not tell you about the
twins? That I just kept quiet and you find out
everything by yourself?"

Her : "No"

Me : "Then tell me what you want Tasha cause
me being upfront with you doesn't seem to be
working out for me. What am I supposed to
do?"

Her : "I don't know" she said softly

Me : "Tell me what will make you happy

Natasha and I'll do it" she kept quiet "You see that, now you're quiet"

I sighed then pulled her towards me and kissed the shit out of her and she kissed me back, my hand travelled under her gown to her bare thighs and I squeezed them then made my way to her panties. I pushed it aside opening her folds with my fingers and she was already wet. I rubbed her clit & she released a shaky breathe in between our kissing, I moved my fingers from her clit to her wet hole and inserted 2 fingers, she moaned softly holding my wrist in place. I pulled out of the kiss and looked at her while I flicked my fingers inside her warm & wet hole, she moaned out a bit louder and my dick hardened.

Me : "I love you, do you hear me?" She nodded "Look at me Natasha" she opened her eyes and I stucked my fingers deeper "I said I love you"

Her : "I love you too Zwe..." I led my thumb to

her clit and gave it some attention while my fingers were still working on her hole

Me : "Then act like it, stop disrespecting me. Voice out how you feel properly not through tantrums" I pulled my fingers out but continued rubbing against her clit and she let go of my wrist

Her : "I'm sorry" she said in a low tone and I nodded, took the same fingers I had just fucked her with and put them in her mouth, she licked them & I kissed her tasting her juices then looked her

Me : "you and I have been through hell and back together haven't we?"

Her : "We have"

Me : "And I love you so much baby. You have stayed by my side through the toughest of times even before the thing with my dad you've always been my rider and I appreciate that

along with your feistiness but you need to know that there's a time and place for everything. We do not, under any circumstances, have a blow out in front of our son ever. Do you understand me?" She nodded "don't go mute on me now, talk so that I know you and I have a mutual understanding"

Her : "I hear you Zwe and yes I understood every word you just said"

Me : "Understand that I'm not your friend, I am your man and you'll address me with the same respect that I address you with"

Her : "Yes Zwe" I nodded

Me : "Good" I pecked her lips then her forehead
"Go inside"

She fixed herself then opened the door

Me : "You not gonna hug me?" She turned around and gave me a tight hug

Her : "Good night" we let go and I pecked her lips

Me : "Good night" she walked out the car and went inside the house.

I moved to the drivers seat and started the car ignition then drove straight home, the lights were off meaning Babz & mom were sleeping so I walked in quietly, went to the kitchen got a bottle of water and drank it as I made my way to my room. I stripped down to my drawers and got under the covers, but I had no sleep in me so I googled a few things on twins just to prepare myself and see what I could do for Imi. Soon drowsiness kicked in so I fell asleep but it wasn't long until my phone rang waking me up from my sleep, I answered without checking the caller ID.

"mh?"

"Salaam alaykum Kumkani" (peace be upon you)

it was Imi

Me : "Wa alaykum as-salaam" (and upon you be peace)

Her : "Am I disturbing your sleep?"

Me : "No, not at all. I was awake, I actually just came out the shower"

Her : *giggles* "You're lying Kumkani"

Me : "Okay fine, maybe I was sleeping"

Her : "Mh okay. I'm calling because my dad wants to see you and your mom" I sat up straight with pillows supporting my back

Me : *clears throat* "Your dad"

Her : "Yes, don't be scared"

Me : "psssh me? Scared? Never"

Her : "Well he wants to see you this afternoon"

Me : "Are you serious?"

Her : "As childbirth"

Me : *laughs* "You've got jokes today hey"

Her : "Be here by 1"

Me : "Okay I'll talk to my mom"

Her : "And remember you can't call me Iminam in front of him"

Me : "I know princess Imaraah"

Her : "Okay, I'll see you in the afternoon then"

Me : "Protect me from your father please"

Her : *giggles* "Ma hilmami karo inay wax kugu dhacaan"

Me : "Translation princess"

Her : "I will never let anything happen to you" that right there made me smile

Me : *smiling* "Okay, make yourself look pretty for me fancy face, just to calm my nerves when I am sitting in that lounge with your dad"

Her : "okay bye"

Me : "good morning to you too"

Her : "Bye Zwe"

She hung up and I tossed my phone on my bed then got off the bed and wore my sweats. I went into the bathroom and washed my face then brushed my teeth and went to the lounge, mom was sitting on the couch reading her bible, I just sat next to her quietly. After reading her scripture she knelt down by the couch and looked at me to do the same so I did and she prayed. When she was done with her morning prayer she gazed at me

Me : *clears throat* "Morning ma"

Her : "What's troubling you early morning boy?" I scratched the back of my head

Me : "Uhhh Imi's father asked for our presence this afternoon"

Her : *sigh* "I knew this was coming. Why do you look so nervous?"

Me : "Mama you know how he is"

Her : "Well you knew that when you jumped into bed with his daughter without protection boy"

Me : "Ma..."

Her : "Okay I'm sorry, I'll make us breakfast then we can get ready and go"

Me : "Thank you mama"

Her : "Anything for you baby" she stood up and placed her bible on the coffee table then made her way to the kitchen. I took my phone out of my pocket and texted Imi telling her that we would be there for sure in the afternoon.

Insert 20

Δ

ZWELIBANZI

•

I checked myself in the mirror one more time

before leaving my room, I was dressed in my black chino pants, my white chinese collar shirt and black formal shoes. Of course with a black belt, my mom ironed everything by herself because apparently that is not one of my strongest points, ironing that is. Although she didn't want to admit it, she was just as nervous as I was about this meeting.

"Zweli I really don't want to be late!" - she shouted

Me : "I'm coming ma!" I grabbed my watch and cellphone then went to the lounge."I'm here"

Her : "You are such a girl sometimes"

Me : "Haaaah!" She stood up from the couch

Her : "This is fine right?" She was dressed in dusty pink dress that was over the knee with a matching blazer and stocking along with her granny heels

Me : *smiles* "Perfect" she looked at Babalwa

Her : "Baby are sure uzoba right wedwa?" (You'll be fine on your own)

Babi : "Yes ma, stop babying me"

Her : "I'm just making sure Vuyelwa, you could always come with us"

Babi : "No thank you"

Me : "Mama you're the one who is going to make us late now"

Her : "Hehake, okay masambe" (let's go) she took her car keys and her little purse

Me : "Bye sis"

Her : "Good luck bro bro"

Ma : *laughs* "He needs it"

We went to the car and ma drove us, her slow driving was really working on my nerves because I just wanted to get there so we can get this meeting over and done with but no mama just had to be overly cautious on the

road but we finally got the Gamildien residence and we parked on their driveway

Mama : "You ready boy?"

Me : *sigh* "I don't have much of a choice do I?"

Her : *chuckles* "You are so scared baby shame man, don't be okay? Just relax"

Me : "What was I thinking making that man's daughter pregnant mama what if he kills me in there?" I buried my face in my hands and mama laughed, like really laughed

Her : *catching her breathe* "Let's go inside"

I breathed out and got off the car so did she, we walked towards the gate and buzzed in. Imi's mom answered I could tell by the voice

Her : "Who's there?"

Mama : "It is the Booi's"

Her : "Oh okay, you came" she sounded surprised "you can come in" she buzzed us in

and we walked down the pathway leading to the door

Mama : "Zweli calm down will you!"

Me : "You say it like it's easy mama"

Her : "Just breath okay?" I nodded

When we got to the door Mrs Gamildien was already waiting for us by the door, she smiled at my mother

Mrs G : "Hello sisi" my mom put out her hand and they shook hands

Her : "Molo bethuna, ndiyathemba uright under the circumstances" (hi, I hope you're well under the circumstances)

Mrs G : *smiling* "ndizothini sisi imeko asinoyi tshintsha" (what can I say? We can't change the way things are) she then looked at me
"Kumkani"

Me : "Molo ma" she nodded and stepped aside

Her : "You can go through to the lounge"

I swallowed and walked behind umama, I don't think you guys understand how scared I am of this man. We walked in but Imi was nowhere in sight

Mrs G : "Imaraah is in the kitchen" I nodded and walked slowly behind my mom until we got to the lounge and there was the big dog, sitting in his couch with his Qur'an in hand. He was always dressed in his traditional attire. He looked up at us then stood up

Him : "Salaam alaykum"

"Wa alaykum as-salaam" my mom and I said

Him : "You may be sitted" he looked at his wife "Get Imaraah please and some beverages for our visitors" he then looked at us "What will it be?"

Mom : "Just a glass of water for both of us" he nodded and sat down, so did we.

His wife disappeared down the passage, he just sat there looking me making me uncomfortable to even breathe or blink! Yoh what was I thinking mara!? After today I'm stocking up on condoms I swear after a while Iminam came into the lounge with mom walking behind her holding a tray with 5 glasses and 5 bottles of water. They both sat down next to Mr Gamildien, I took a bottle of water from the table, poured into a glass for my mother then did the same for me

Her : "Enkosi boy" (thank you)

Mr G : *clears throat* "We all know why we are here today so I'd like us to begin the reason of us coming together here today" I took a huge gulp of water then placed the glass down, he looked at his wife "Would you like to say something before we start?" She shook her head "Okay, Mrs Booi your son here deflowered my daughter and planted his seeds inside her"

Her : *nods* "Yes I've just been made aware of that a day ago"

Him : "We understood that your family was going through some turmoil but now it's time to face the matter at hand before Imaraah here goes into labour"

Her : "I agree with you"

Him : "Okay I'll get straight to the point, there is no use of us dragging this out any further. My daughter is pregnant with twins that your son is responsible for, not one but two kids now as you know I'm a very religious Muslim man. I'm appalled at the behaviour displayed by both these children because Imaraah has brought your son here before and I told him what would happened should something like this happened, didn't I Kumkani?"

Me : *clears throat* "Ye..yes sir you did" mom looked at me with questioning eyes

Mr G : "worry not Mrs Booi I'll disclose it to you too" she nodded "as I've pointed out that Imaraah was a virgin before Kumkani here came along, now your son took that away from here and that to me & my culture is already an offence and please do not think I'm shifting blame onto your son. I've already had a serious talk with Imaraah about this"

Ma : *nods* "Yes I understand that"

Him : "Now she is expecting almost due, I expect of your son to make things right here and lift the shame he has placed on not only my family name but on Imaraah as well"

Mama : "I'm not sure if I follow Mr Gamildien"

Him : "I expect your son to marry my daughter before these girls are born or he won't see them after birth"

Ma : "But that's not how things work with us sir"

Him : "This is my home, my rules and my

daughter. You will do things how you please in your own home" I swallowed

Ma : "I'm sorry but we are Christians"

Him : "Then your son would have surely waited till marriage would he?"

"pa I..." - Iminam didn't even get to finish what she wanted to say cause her father roared

Him : "Are you speaking while elders are speaking Imaraah!!?"

Mrs G : "Love calm down please" she placed her hand on his shoulder and Iminam looked down. He sipped a bit of water from the bottle then focused his gaze upon us but didn't speak

Ma : "Mr Gamildien I understand that you are religious but shouldn't we let the two of them decide what they want? I mean it's their lives after all" he chuckled

Him : "No kid will make decisions in my house"

he looked at me "I await for your answer Kumkani" everyone turned their gaze upon me and I was tongue tied honestly. I picked up the glass of water and finished of the last bit I had left

Me : *clears throat* "Mr Gamildien firstly I'd like to apologize for bringing shame upon your family but I love your daughter very much and I take these two as a blessing although they weren't planned for. I'd hate to disrespect your religion even further and I really want to be a part of my girls lives, all 3 of them. I love Imaraah sir, I'll do it"

"Kumkani nooo!" Iminam hissed at me her father looked at her

Him : "Imaraah!" She spoke back to him in arabic and they had a heated argument, mama and I couldn't understand a word of it.

Mrs G : "Imaraah! Shut up!" She was about to

talk back "Now! Zip it now!" She furiously wiped her tears and my mom gave her a glass of water

Imi : "Thank you" my mom just smiled

Mr G : "The ceremony will take place next week"

Ma : "no offence but what kind of ceremony?"

Mr G : "My daughter is muslim so it should be obvious"

Her : "My son is Christian, as I've pointed out not so long ago"

Him : "Your son will have to convert to Islam"

Her : "Over my dead body" she stood up "Zweli masambe" (let's go)

Me : "Mama I..."

Her : "I will not repeat myself Zwelibanzi! Phakama ngoku!" (Get up right now) I stood up, she looked at Mr Gamildien "When you are ready to be reasonable you will contact us"

Him : "My demands stay as they are"

Her : "Then I'll see you in court" she pulled my hand and marched towards the exit

Me : "Mama stop please" she turned around and looked at me

Her : "We will talk when we get home" I sighed then turned around to face the Gamildien's

Me : "I'll do it" Imi's dad nodded and mama walked out, I ran after her

-
-

BABALWA

Δ

My life has taken a complete shift like totally, ever since papa has been sentenced things have changed and not for the worst. We were closer as a family, mama was certainly better mentally and her bible was her best friend. Bhuti

was going through his own challenges with his two baby mommas but he still made it a point to be there for mom and I. Well until he and Iminam got married, ai wow ubhuti. I didn't expect him to go through with it, I thought he would stand his ground and actually say no when marriage was proposed but he actually agreed to it. One would say that he actually wanted things to unfold the way they did but anyway we (Zweli and I) were both accepted at the University of the Western Cape. He changed courses and was now doing law while I did a B. Com in Accounting Sciences, mama said I was brave to take that course because it was not easy but I loved working with numbers & it was one of my best subjects in high school. Even with everything that I had going on I still managed to pass with a distinction in accounting and maths, the other subjects I passed too just not with distinctions though.

"I'm very pleased with the progress you are making Babalwa, from our first session until now I see great change in you so we will only have 2 sessions a week instead of every weekday" - my therapist said

Me : *smiles* "No kidding?"

Her : *laughs* "No kidding at all, I want to see how you are going to settle in university and maybe how you'll be when you find a boyfriend too"

Me : "Me? Boyfriend? I don't think so"

Her : *smiles* "It's okay, there is no rush but you will be going into a completely different world so you have to mentally prepare yourself.

Understand that not everyone whom you befriend on campus will be good to you and always remember the real reason you are there"

Me : "I don't need friends Ashley" that was her name

Her : "I want you to make friends, stop isolating yourself"

Me : "I'll try"

Her : "That's all I want, for you to try but be careful. You can even join the running & the long jump team since you love athletics so much"

Me : *laughs* "You really want me to socialize?"

Her : "Yes"

Me : "Okay I'll try" she checked her wrist watch

Her : "We have about 15 minutes left of this session, is there anything else you'd like us to talk about?"

Me : *sigh* "This thing with my brother"

Her : "Yes, what about it?"

Me : "I just feel like it's unfair on Tasha"

Her : "Natasha is the same girl who helped you

guys through the case?" I nodded "So you feel your brother should have married her and not the other girl?"

Me : "He is too young to even be married"

Her : "But he is"

Me : "I know but.."

Her : "You feel Natasha is the one for your brother?" I nodded "Well have you thought of what your brother wants? Maybe he actually loves the second girl more"

Me : "He loves Natasha I know it"

Her : "I'm not saying he doesn't, I'm just saying you should support your brother's choices instead of judging him. He supported you so why can't you do the same for him when he needs you?" I couldn't answer that "just be nice to your brother's wife, she's pregnant and needs all the help she can get. Stop being nasty to her, she does not need all that unnecessary stress"

Me : "How did you know?"

Her : "I just know, you feel like you'll be betraying Natasha if you accept your brother's wife?"

Me : "Yes"

Her : "But Natasha is still with your brother isn't she?"

Me : "She is"

Her : "So stop putting yourself in an awkward position and be a sister to your brother and your new sister in law"

Me : "Okay I'll try my best but ever since she lived with us mama hasn't been at peace with Zweli"

Her : "Because they are Muslim and you guys are Christian?" I nodded "but that has nothing to do with you, just don't take sides"

Me : "Okay thank you"

Insert 21

△

BABALWA

•

Today was the first day of orientation week, Zweli did not need it because he knew his way around campus from last year so mom was going to drop me off. I woke up early in the morning so that I could get ready without having to rush around and I had already taken out my outfit the night before. I made my bed then opened my curtains along with the windows, went to go brush my teeth in the bathroom & stepped into the shower.

After my peaceful shower, I cleansed my face and only after that did I apply lotion on my skin. I wore my denim skin tight jeans and plain white t-shirt which I tucked in along with my white nikey. Although I wasn't really a great sister in

law, Imaraah had taught me how to do my eyebrows so I did my eyebrows and applied some mascara. The lipgloss I'd apply after breakfast, I sat in front of the mirror and combed my hair which I tied into a low since I was going to wear my white cap. There was a slight knock then my door opened, I looked back and it was my mom.

Her : *smiling* "Look at my baby"

Me : *giggles* "Good morning"

Her : "So great to see you excited Vuyelwa, it's time for breakfast"

Me : "Okay mama, I'm coming" she nodded then closed the door slightly.

I cleared the space I was busy on then went out to the dinning room, Zweli was sitting next to mom

Me : "Morning Zwe..."

Him : "morning Babi" I sat down

Me : "Imi not joining us this morning?"

Him : "She's still sleeping, we had a rough night"

Ma : "something wrong with the kids?"

Him : "No, just difficulty finding a comfortable sleeping position for her"

Her : "oh Zweli you must give her a massage every once in a while to relax her muscles before bed"

Him : "will do" I just listened to them talk while I ate

Ma : "I hoped you would join us to yesterday's service. It was uplifting you should have been there"

Him : "Ma please, don't start"

Her : "Zweli" he looked at me

Him : "Enjoy yourself today okay?" I swallowed

the food that was in my mouth before looking at mom who looked appalled by Zweli's behavior then back at him

Me : *nods* "I will"

He got up from his chair

Him : "Thank you for breakfast mama" he then walked out of the dinning area

I took my glass of juice and quickly drank it to avoid eye contact with mama.

"finish up so that we can leave" I nodded looking down at my plate.

We finished eating and I dished for Imi then placed her food in the microwave, I left a sticker on the fridge telling her she would find it there then grabbed some fruit and a few snacks put them in my backpack rushing after my mom who was already in the car. I climbed in front and buckled up, she drove off without saying anything. This thing with Zweli was really not

sitting well with her and it was affecting me too now cause she would be in a foul mood, I put on the radio in the car but she switched it off

Me : "Mama"

Her : "No Babalwa"

I sighed and took my phone from my bag, plugged in my earphones and looked out the road with my music playing. I made sure to put it on it's loudest cause I didn't want my mood being ruined by mama, I was really excited about school and I wasn't about to let mama ruin my day so early in the morning for something that has got nothing to do with me. When we arrived on campus we were directed to the main hall where all the first year students were then taken on a tour by our PF's around campus so mama sent me a message saying she would wait for me at the student centre. I ended making an acquittance in my PF group, well two actually, Lifa and Fanisa we even

exchanged numbers. After the long walks around campus we were excused and I went to look for my mom found her sitting with some other parents. Basically I had a long day!!

"you'll be able to come by yourself tomorrow? Or do you want me to drop you?" - mama asked as she drove us home

Me : "Come by myself? How?"

Her : "Public transport Babalwa, you must learn to use a bus"

Me : "hay no mama, not happening. I'll get lost"

Her : "Umdala ngoku Vuyelwa" (you're old now)

Me : "It's not my fault you spoiled me"

Her : "Baby"

Me : "I'll ask bhuti to drop me if you can't" she sighed

Her : "Should we buy take outs?" I shrugged

Me : "I'm not really hungry"

Her : "Okay"

She drove us straight home, Imi as well as Zweli's car were both parked in the garage meaning they were still home. I went inside, mama was going to Monday service. She's so hooked on church lately but I'm tired today. I walked in the house and I could hear the tv playing in the lounge but there was no one there so I checked the kitchen and Imi was there with Junior.

Me : "Afternoon" she looked at me and smiled, Jr ran to give me a hug "I didn't know you would be here, u-right?" He nodded

"How was your first day?" Imi asked. I sat on the high chair and let Jr go back to the kitchen

Me : "It was okay, just very tired. How are you?"

Her : *sighs* "They are draining all my energy" she said that brushing her belly "I don't feel like

doing anything or talking to anyone, if I could I would walk around the house in a huge t-shirt only because I'm getting so irritated by these clothes they make me too hot. All I want to do is just eat but your brother doesn't understand. He says I'm being moody"

Me : "Well that seems like a lot to take in"

Her : "You have no idea, any day now I'm just waiting on them because wow mommy is tired"

Me : *laughs* "You'll miss having them inside you like that"

Her : "I just want to have them in my arms already so does your brother"

Me : "Speaking of which, where is he?"

Her : "In the bedroom" she gave Jr a small bowl of noodles and he went to go sit in front of the TV with it

Me : *clears throat* "I thought he would be in

crèche this week?"

Her : "He's going next week when his father starts having classes" I nodded "Should I make you something to eat?"

Me : "No thank you, I'm just gonna go lay down"
I stood up

Her : "And ma?"

Me : "Church" she nodded and poured juice into Jr plastic cup then into 2 glasses only then I noticed the delicious sandwiches she made on the counter

Her : "Can you tell your brother to come eat" I nodded and walked off to his room, I knocked and he told me to come in.

Me : "Zwe" I walked in only to find him busy setting up the two cots we had bought this weekend when we went shopping "Well this looks nice"

Him : "Really?" He asked proud of himself while looking at the two cots he had just put together and I nodded "Thanks sis"

Me : "You're welcome, wifey says you should go eat"

Him : "Be there just now"

Me : "Nice life problems hey" I walked out of his room went straight to mine and took a nap.

Around past 6 my phone rang waking me up, I checked the caller ID and it was Lifa from my PF group. I saved his number earlier on campus.

Me : "Hello?"

Him : "Hi! Girl I've been texting you on WhatsApp but it has BEEEEEN one tick hey"

Me : *yawns* "I've been napping since I got home, what's up?"

Him : "Oh nothing, I was just checking to see if you're all goodie"

Me : *chuckles* "Well that's sweet but yes I'm good"

Him : "We should do lunch tomorrow, Fanisa says she had some sushi from a shop in A-Block and its to die for"

Me : "I've never really had sushi, not much of a fan of seafood"

Him : "You lie! Me too but I wanna try it and you're gonna join me"

Me : "I don't have a choice it seems"

Him : "No you don't, so tomorrow during lunch. A-Block"

Me : "Okay"

Him : "Good night"

Me : "Nighty" I hung up and put my phone on my bedside.

I got up and switched on the lights, my curtains & windows were closed which meant mama

was back. I went to go freshen up in the bathroom then took off the jeans and wore my track shorts. When I got to the lounge Zweli was sitting in there with his little family on the L couch, he was massaging Imi's feet.

Me : "Don't you guys just look cute"

Him : "Don't annoy me V"

Me : *laughs* "oh so you know you supposed to massage a pregnant woman's feet?" He looked at me and Imi moved her feet off his lap "nooo I was just joking"

Mama called me from the kitchen and Zweli looked at me annoyed, I mouthed 'sorry'. I helped mama with the final touches then we had supper only to be disturbed by Zweli's phone.

Him : "sorry, I thought it's off" he took it out of his pocket and checked the screen "Have to take this" he stood up and answered "Tash..."

He walked out the dining area and I looked at Imi who simply placed her fork down

Her : "excuse me"

Mama : "eat please, I made sure everything is halaal today"

Her : *smiles* "thank you but I'm not really hungry ma" she stood up and walked out. I looked at mama and she looked hurt

"Mama ina!" (Here) Junior handed mama his broccoli and she smiled

Her : "enkosi" (thank you) he gave her more of his broccoli, mama was so oblivious to what he was doing and just charmed by his cutness
omg

Zweli joined us after a while, ate fed his son then left to his room leaving mama and I alone.

-
-

ZWELIBANZI

△

After supper I went to give Junior a bath then dressed him in his pajamas with Imi watching us but not saying anything. She was mad because of the call I got from Natasha, she didn't want us talking unless it was about Junior and since he was here for the week she did not understand why she even had to call especially since I did not hand the phone over to our son.

"Zwe..." - she whispered my name, I tuned from the door to look at her and she was crying. Sigh, I opened the door and placed Junior down.

Me : "Babalwa!"

Her : "Yeah?" She appeared down the passage

Me : "Can you watch him for me please? Just a few minutes" she nodded "Hamba boy" (go) he ran to Babalwa and I closed the door then walked over to the bed, that is where she was

sitting. I climbed on the bed next to her and wrapped my one arm around her. She cuddled herself even closer to me and just sniffed, sigh. I hated making her cry, I know what I have to do but it wasn't an easy task for me.

Her : "Zweli"

Me : "Mimo" she sighed then sat up properly and looked at me, I wiped her wet cheeks

Her : "Am I not enough for you?"

Me : "It's not like that Imaraah"

Her : "But that's what polygamy is, you're basically telling me I'm not enough Kumkani"

Me : "That's not what I'm implying by asking you for this"

Her : "Then what are you implying? Actually no don't answer that, if you want this polygamy thing of yours then you can have it but I refuse of you to have a girlfriend outside this marriage"

Me : "You know I can't take another wife right now" she just starred at me "okay, I'll break things off with Natasha and concentrate on us and our little family, Junior included"

Her : "I was going to exclude your son Zweli, I have no problem with him and you know that. I just want you to break things off with Natasha"

Me : "Can we talk about something else now"

Her : "Kumkani"

Me : "Baby"

Her : "Give me your word"

Me : "I..." There was a knock and then my mom spoke up

"can you guys come to the lounge please"

Me : "Okay mama we'll be there"

Her : "Now please, it won't be long"

Me : "Coming!"

I stood up then helped Imi up and we went to the lounge, Junior was still awake watching cartoons. We all sat down and mama turned the volume down.

Her : *clears throat* "I'll make this brief, I hate the tension going on in this house. Zwelibanzi I am tired of your nonsense it's time for you to clean up your act. You agreed to this married and I expect of you to act accordingly. Imaraah baby I'm sorry for any discomfort we have caused you since your arrival here in our home, you are a sweet child you don't deserve all this. We took you from your home and into ours *sigh* I'll put the religion topic to rest as it is sensitive plus Zweli has made his choice. But I apologize baby for not making you feel welcome"

Babalwa : "I'm sorry too for my behaviour towards you Imaraah, you're my elder and married to my brother. I'll give you the respect

you deserve from now onwards and stop acting like a spoilt brat"

Mimo : "Wow ummmh thank you very much mama this means a lot to me, it hasn't been easy since I got here there's been days where I felt like going home because of how unwelcomed I felt but you coming to me like this and saying all these things that feels very welcoming to me and it makes me happy because I want my girls to be born into a healthy home where there is love and peace" she looked at me "a home where we cherish and respect one another at all times" she then looked at Babalwa "Thank you to you too and mama I accept your apology, nawe Babalwa" (you too Babalwa)

Me : *clears throat* "I'd like to apologize for my behaviour during the past few weeks, especially to you mama and you Imaraah. I have been and yes I'll admit selfish, I've been making decisions

without thinking about the implications of how it would make the people around me feel.

Babalwa I'm sorry sis for making the mood in this home one that is foul when we should be positive especially after what we have been through *swallows* Imaraah" she turned to look at me "I'm sorry about everything I put you through baby, you didn't deserve any of it" I stood up

Her : "Where are you going?"

Me : "To fix this" she tried to stand but she was struggling "Baby sit" I pecked her lips "I'll be back"

-

Wrote this tired as a dog and it's unedited

Insert 22

△

NATASHA

•

Sigh God remind me why I love this man so much, enlighten me on why I just can't seem to let go even when he is hurting me like this .

He married her without thinking twice, without thinking about how I'd feel! Even after he poured out his heart to me, assuring me he wouldn't hurt me again he goes out and does exactly that. And still I stand by him like the fool that I am for loving him. I don't know why I can't just leave, I feel like he just wants to use me but I'm addicted to his love. My mind is telling me one thing and that's to get it together & leave but my heart is telling me another & it's heavy under the pressure. Love is my drug I get it then don't remember how Zweli really treats me, I deserve better but he knows how to keep me.

Goddammit I wanna leave but it's just never that easy when I'm this consumed by nothing

but love for this man.

My phone rang as I came out of the tub, I checked the ID and it was Zweli.

Me : "baba"

Him : "hey, I'm outside"

Me : "Right now?" I walked over to my window and peeked through the blinds "oh okay, I just came out of the tub can you give me a few minutes?"

Him : "no problem" I swallowed, he was so cold towards me and that worried me. Could he be here to break things off?

Me : "Are you okay?"

Him : "Come outside then we can talk properly" my heart dropped, my worst fear was about to take place. I'm loosing him, I lost him the day he found out about Iminam being pregnant

Me : "Okay" he hung up.

I placed my phone on the chest of drawers, I quickly applied lotion then wore my pajamas along with the gown and my bedroom shoes. I walked downstairs and my parents weren't in the lounge, in actual fact the lights were off downstairs. I sneaked out quietly then used the small gate and approached Zweli's car, he stepped out when he saw me approaching it.

Me : "Hey" he didn't say anything just gave me a hug, like a tight hug and my heart broke. When he pulled out I wiped the tear that had fallen down my cheek. He opened the back door for me and I got in so did he, he didn't switch on the lights like he usually would. "Zweli you're scaring me" he sighed

Him : "You know I love you right?"

"You promised" - I said softly, I knew where this was heading

Him : "Tash..."

Me : "baby you promised" a tear fell down my cheek and he pulled me into his chest, the only light we used was the one from the streetlights shining into the car.

Him : "I know" he sighed "And I'm sorry baby"

Me : "Why do you always do this to me Zweli? What did I do to deserve all this heartbreak Zwe? Tell me what it is that I'm doing wrong that it always has to me at the receiving end getting hurt every time" I sat up and looked at him "Why Zweli? That's all I want to know. Is me loving you that much of a bad thing?" He buried his face in his hands and we sat there in silence

"Nothing I do is right lately" he finally said then he looked at me "Maybe me agreeing to marry Iminam was a drastic decision but I wanted to be present in my children's lives, I didn't want them being born in a home with turmoil like the one I grew up in, I didn't want to have to fight for my kids. I just wanted to be there, I already

missed out on so much and yes I love Imi" that pierced like a dagger straight to my heart

Me : "More than me?" He cupped my face

Him : "You'll always be my first love, you taught me love" he kissed me and it was filled with emotions. I held his wrists and pulled out of the kiss but we stayed with our foreheads rested on one another "I love you so much but nobody understands what I want. I don't want to hurt neither you or Iminam but I'm being made to feel selfish for loving and wanting both of you"

Me : "How did you expect this to work Zweli?"

He sat back on the chair and looked out the window, I sighed cuddling myself on to him and he wrapped his free arm around me bringing me closer to him

Him : "I don't know but I just wanted to have the two women that I love, the two women who complete me to be mine and mine only. I know

it's a big ask but am I really asking for the impossible really? How selfish am I really being for imagining this to be something so beautiful Tash? I don't expect of the two of you to be the best of friends just to have you guys in my life getting along and letting me love you and only you guys. I am not saying it would be perfect but it would be a learning curve for all 3 of us and our kids *sigh* Natasha I really want this baby, I do so badly. It would make me really happy" I didn't know what to say, I never thought a day would come where Zweli would ask this of me. I always thought it would be the two of us and our child "Tash"

Me : "Mh?" He pulled me to sit on his lap and we looked at each other

Him : "I can't let you go, I can't" I just glared at him, I was tongue tied "Please try, for me. For us please" he cupped my face and pecked my lips, when he pulled out a tear fell down his

cheek.

Me : "don't do this please Kani" I wiped his tears and kissed him, he pulled out and hugged me tightly again, I didn't want to leave his big strong arms. "I'll do it" he pulled out and looked at me

Him : "You mean that?" I nodded and he kissed me yet again "thank you" he pecked my lips "thank you so much"

Me : "I love you"

Him : "I love you even more" I embraced him yet again

Me : "You have to go home" I pulled out and looked at him

Him : "you are not going to change my mind after I leave right?" I nodded

Me : "I won't, I promise" he pecked my lips again

Him : "Thank you, no more games I promise" I held out my pinky and he hooked his on mine

then we kissed

I walked back inside the house and heard his car drive away, I locked but as I was about to walk up the staircase my dad came from the kitchen. I stopped in my tracks and looked at him.

Me : "Dad"

Him : "You really love that boy" I nodded and he sighed "Come" he walked to the lounge and I turned following behind him. We sat on the couch "He married the Muslim girl didn't he?"

Me : "He did"

Him : "So what do you want from him Natty? You can find somebody else"

Me : "I don't want someone else dad I want him"

Him : "So you're going to share him with another female" I didn't answer "you're going to be the other girl"

Me : "We will marry in due time dad and please don't try to talk me out of it, I love Zweli and he loves me too. Just let me see where this goes please"

Him : "I'm not trying to change your mind Nat, I'm just trying to understand what's going on. I am not going to tell you how to live your life, it's your happiness just that your mother isn't happy about this at all"

Me : " She never really liked Kani in the first place so that I know" I stood up "I'm going to bed, I have to go to work in the morning"

Him : "I hope you told them you're going to school next week and they must change you to part-time"

Me : "I wouldn't jeopardize my future dad relax and good night" I walked upstairs to my room.

-
-

IMARAAH

△

After Zweli left Babalwa went to bed and Zweli's mother offered to give me a back rub so I let her be even though I was reluctant at first once she started I didn't want her to stop, she should really give Zweli some pointers. His massages sucked, it's either he is doing it too softly or he is pressing on me too hard. After the massage I tucked Junior into his bed, he was a sweet child that just loved playing and very loveable never gives me any hassles although his father always complained about him being naughty. Speaking of which Zweli had been gone for a while now and I was beginning to worry, I wanted to know what was going on but I did not want to nag him especially now so I just took off my gown & night dress then sat back on the bed with pillows supporting me.

I always slept naked because clothes really

caused me a lot of discomfort, Zweli didn't mind my nudity at all and with my hormones all over the place he would have a filled evening all the time. I'd let him have his way with me because after sex I always fall into deep sleep but without it I toss and turn at night gosh these girls were really making me a mess. I just wanted to meet my angels already, Kumkani really blessed me with these two souls inside of me. I thank Allah everyday because I've fallen so deeply in love with them and I truly don't regret falling pregnant, at all. I caressed my belly.

"Mommy is going to protect you two with everything she has *sigh* ma ogolaan karo inay wax kugu dhacaan" (I can't let anything happened to you)

"Translation?" I looked up and Kumkani was standing by the door, I smiled

Me : "you need to stop sneaking up on me"

Him : *smiles* "I love admiring your beauty and how you always talk to them" he closed the door and walked towards the bed

Me : "No, go take a shower first before climbing on the bed"

Him : "princess..." I shook my head "fine" he walked to the bathroom and I got under the covers trying to sleep.

After a while I felt myself drifting off to sleep even though I tried hard to fight it because I still wanted to talk to Kumkani. It was long until I felt him spooning me from behind with his hand caressing my belly, he placed a soft peck on my cheek then my neck and I moaned as I felt his rod harden against my buns.

"Kani no I'm sleeping" my voice betrayed me because that came out as a whisper.

Him : "I'll be quick" his hand left my belly to my thigh, he ran his hand up and down my thigh

softly while nibbling on my neck and giving it a few love bites. My body was responding to his touch, I felt myself getting wet & hot so I kicked the covers and he chuckled cause he knew what that meant, I was ready for him.

I pushed my buns against his solid rod and he lifted my thigh, I made sure I opened up for him as he opened my folds with the head of his dick then rubbing it up and down my wet entrance making me suffer even more

Me : "Kumkani" and that's all I had to say before I felt him enter into my domain which was now under his spell. I moaned softly as he breathed heavily in my ear with muffled groans as he started grinding inside me and I met him halfway, he held my thigh tightly

Him : "Imaraah mhhmm" he buried his face in my neck and groaned "this feels so good fuck!"

Me : "Baby harder" he went in deeper and harder,

I bit the pillow to keep my moans down as I fisted the sheets in my hand

Him : "Can I take it standing please don't be loud" he kissed my neck and I nodded.

I held on to the bed as he entered me from behind.

"aaah Zweli" I moaned and he grunted as he slammed harder and deeper into me I bit on my lower lip trying to keep my moans down as my orgasm built up "Baby I can't, I can't"

Him : "Wait princess... fuck!" He went faster

Me : "Aaaa..." He quickly put his hand over my mouth and I came all over him but he kept going until he reached his peak too. He pulled out and went to the bathroom, came back with a towel and wiped me clean then kissed me

Him : "I love you"

"is everything okay boy?" Zweli's mom asked

from the other side of the door, my eyes popped

Him : "Ma?"

Her : "oh okay sorry baby, I thought that maybe Imi had gone into labour sorry"

Him : "Everything is fine, go to sleep"

Her : "Okay good night"

Him : "Night" he looked at me and shook his head before kissing me again "Told you to keep it down"

Me : *giggles* "I couldn't help it, sorry" he threw the towel on the floor and climbed on the bed next to me

Him : "Maraah"

Me : "Kani"

Him : "Baby I couldn't do it" I moved away from his chest and looked at him

Me : "I don't understand"

Him : "I just couldn't. I can't break things off with Natasha, I can't bring myself to do it *sigh* I love her just as I love you Imaraah..."

Me : "So you just had sex with me knowing you..."

Him : "Princess please I don't want to fight I just..."

Me : "Kumkani I'm failing to understand you lately"

Him : "If you could just listen please" I sighed and sat up, so did he.

Insert 23

Δ

ZWELIBANZI

•

The talk with Imi wasn't easy as one could have

imagined, she really didn't want this polygamy thing but I wasn't going to back down and I made that clear to her. She said she'd think about it then gave me her back for the rest of the night, not wanting me to touch so I let her be and fell into a deep slumber too.

When I woke up in the morning my queen was still sleeping, guess we should pass the "princess" title over to the girls on the way. She looked beautiful even in her sleep but I didn't want to disturb her so I went to go freshen up in the bathroom and went to go sit by the little table in my room where I read my prayers from my Qur'an reciting them silently in my heart. After morning prayer I made my way to go the dinning hall where mama and Babalwa were waiting for me at the breakfast table where we had our morning feast. Babalwa put her phone away when I came in and smiled at me.

Me : "Good morning"

Babi : "Morning"

Ma : "Zweli, we almost started without baby thought you wouldn't be joining us"

Me : "I never miss breakfast mama, you know this" she smiled and nodded

Her : "I already blessed the food so you can dig in"

Babalwa dished for me and we ate, mama didn't ask about where I went off to last night and I was glad cause I wasn't looking for a lecture that's exactly what she was going to give me.

"Bhuti" - Babalwa called out for my attention and I looked up from my plate

Me : "Yeah?"

Her : "Can you drop me off at campus?"

Me : "I thought mama was on transport duty for this week" she looked at mom then back at me

Her : "It's fine, I'll find my own way to campus"

then" she looked back at her plate and I looked at mom for answers she just dismissed me

Me : *clears throat* "okay I'll drop & pick you up then"

Her : *smiles* "Thank you, I'll go get my stuff ready" she got up from the table and left the dining hall and I looked at my mom

Me : "Ma? And then?"

Ma : "I just wanted her to try public transport that's all just a learning curve cause she can't always depend on us"

Me : "you know she's never used that before"

Her : "that's why I wanted her to learn Zwe, Babalwa needs to be independent so that she doesn't always depend on us. So I wanted us to start out small"

Me : *sigh* "you spoiled her, you can't just expect her to understand"

Her : "I know baby that's what I'm trying to rectify here" I stood up and grabbed a plate of food then dished for Imi

Me : "Whatever you see as right ma"

I took the plate with a glass of juice then went to our room and she was still dead with sleep. I placed her breakfast on the table then climbed on the bed next to her and placed a peck on her cheek.

"Maraah" I whispered before placing another one on her neck then shoulder while I carassed her a huge belly "Babe"

"Mhmm Imaad" she murmured still with her eyes closed, I smiled because she called me by the name I got when I converted to Islam. She rarely used it.

"I brought you breakfast baby and I'm going to drop off Babalwa at campus" she opened her eyes and looked at me, I pecked her lips "hey"

Her : *smiles* "hey"

Me : "you going to be okay on your own? Junior is still sleeping so I can't leave with him and I don't know if mom is going anywhere so do you wanna come with me?"

Her : "I'm tired" she yawned

Me : "Okay but wake up and eat then go shower, you can nap after that"

Her : "mhhhm Zweli nooo" she pulled the blanket over her head

Me : "Okay I'm leaving you ke" she raised her head a little over the blankets and smiled

Her : "Bye"

Me : "Are we okay?" She sighed

Her : "we are okay"

Me : *sigh* "baby are you sure?"

Her : "Yes"

Me : "can I get a kiss then?" She pouted and I got under the blankets with her

Her : *giggles* "no now I won't want you to leave baby" I put my hand on her thigh and kissed her deeply and she wrapped her arms around my neck bringing me in closer, she was aroused I could tell because she kept winding her waist against my hand that was on top of her pussy but not doing anything to her "Zwe..." She moaned more like pleaded and I opened her folds and inserted my finger and boy was she wet! "Please" she said that in between our kiss and my dick hardened

Me : "Fuck Imi" I got out of bed and walked over to the door, locked and quickly took off my clothes while she kicked the blankets off the bed then turned over in doggy position waiting for me to penetrate inside her. I cursed under my breath, this pregnancy was making her wild but I didn't waste any time standing on the edge

of the bed and pulling her towards me. I entered her wet, warm and tight pussy, it clung on top my dick so perfectly "fuckkk!" It felt good and hearing her moans made me yearn for her even more...

"Zwe we need to get going!" She shouted from the other side of the door but I didn't stop what I was doing

"15 minutes please"

"Okay!" I heard her footsteps walking away and I pulled out.

Me : "I'll be back quickly baby I promise"

Her : "Kumkani please!"

Me : "Imaraah please baby" I grabbed my T-shirt that was on the floor and put it on, she sat flat on her butt and looked at me, well more like my dick then stormed off to the bathroom. I quickly dressed up then went to the bathroom and she had locked the door "Princess"

Her : "Go away"

Me : "I'll make it up to you when I get back I promise" silence "Imi?" I heard the key turn from the other side of the door then she opened the door and looked at me

Her : "You promise?" I smiled nodding then pecked her lips "okay, thank you for breakfast"

Me : "You gonna have to warm it now"

Her : "No problem, be safe and get back soon"

Me : "I will baby" we walked to the room and she handed me my cellphone along with my car keys "Thank you baby, I'll be back within a blink of an eye" she pecked my lips

Her : "Insha'allah"

•

•

BABALWA

△

Zweli came out all smiles when he came out of his bedroom.

Him : "we can go" he whistled all the way to the garage, as soon as I was buckled he drove out the yard

Me : "and the mood?"

Him : *smirks* "let's just say life is slowly giving me a break"

Me : "meaning?"

Him : *laughs* "all in due time sis"

Me : "ai wow" he put on the radio and was even singing along to the songs.

After dropping me off at the main gate I walked into campus and used the directions Zweli had given me to make it to our group meet up spot that guide from yesterday had given us. When I got there Lifa and Fanny weren't there so I

spent the morning walking with the group quietly, Lifa texted me around 9 asking where we were and I told him, I saw him make his way towards us and I was relieved. I was starting to get bored because here people bonded with those they knew and I found it difficult to make social relations with people, I was very introverted.

"Hey" he said as soon as he reached me

Me : "you're late"

Him : "Trains were delaying"

Me : "oh sorry, didn't know"

Him : "wait were you mad at me?"

Me : "No" he gave me the really look "okay I was, because I'm all alone and Fani isn't coming"

Him : "Great more time for us then" o-kay, I shifted uncomfortably "Nooo not like that, I was just... Never mind, what have you guys done?"

Me : "Nothing much really"

Him : "Still on for sushi?" I nodded

Me : "Guess we should try new things"

Let me just say that this guy was a breath of fresh air, he was funny and free most importantly I felt comfortable around him. Our little experiment with sushi at lunch wasn't all that great though let's just say sushi is not our friend. At the end of the day I tried calling Zweli who wasn't picking up so that he could fetch me, I was starting to stress now because when I tried mom's phone she wasn't picking up either. Lifa kept me company as we waited but after a while he had to leave because it was gonna be dangerous for him to ride train late hours and I understood, he suggested that I uber home since I was scared of taking taxis & a bus.

When I got home there was nobody there

literally no one, great just great! I went to my room and bathed before going to make myself something to eat in the kitchen. Whilst I was busy my phone rang and it was mom

"Baby, I'm so sorry pumpkin! I'm on my way to fetch you now sorry my angel it's just that things were chaotic with Imi in labour but I'm coming okay? Where are you now?"

Me : "What? Imi is in labour?"

Her : "Yes and Zweli was in panick mode baby I'll explain everything when I get there"

Me : "I'm home ma"

Her : "Okay I'm coming, please get some warm clothes for Junior. A jacket for Zweli and my coat, I'll call you when I'm at the gate and you must come outside okay?"

Me : "Okay"

Her : "Love you"

Me : "I love you too ma"

I hung up and rushed around the house grabbing the stuff she wanted then ate quickly, soon she was outside so I went to the car, she hugged me tightly

Her : "i was so worried baby how did you get home?"

Me : "I ordered an uber, what happened?"

Her : "Yoh baby should have seen your brother, never seen him that scared but all is well. Imi had a c-section and the girls are healthy"

Me : "thought they were due in 3 weeks" she shrugged, she was beaming with excitement. In the backseat Jr was fast asleep. "Names?"

Her : "Oh I don't know baby, they haven't named them" I nodded and my phone beeped.

It was Lifa asking if i got home safely, I texted him back telling him I was fine and that my

brother's wife had gone into labour which is why their phones were out of reach. He said congratulations & that he was glad to hear I was okay, that he had just gotten home and was to have supper soon. We had a chat until we got to hospital with my mom. When we got to Imi's ward she was asleep and Zweli had his eyes glued on the two girls in his arms. He looked up as we walked in nomama and smiled

Him : "Can't believe they are here"

Mama : "Oh baby they are beautiful, Imi did well"

Him : "They said she'd wake up after a few hours, she breastfed before passing out" I walked closer to see their faces and they were little cute tiny people. Mama took Junior from me and Zweli handed me a twin.

Me : "Hey sweetie, hiiii" she was making those cute sounds and I fell in love "it's aunt-Babi

here" I looked at Zwe "names?"

Him : "You're holding Amira Daneen Booii and this right here is Aminah Lulu Booii" mom and I looked at each other "Amira means exalted, Daneen meaning princess so that right there is my exalted princess and here Aminah means trustworthy & Lulu meaning pearl so that one I don't need to elaborate on"

Mama : "Beautiful names baby"

Me : "They really are" I looked at Amira "so daddy named you princess hey nana"

She looked so cute guys, Imaad & Imaraah Booii made beautiful twin girls

Insert 24

Δ

IMAAD KUMKANI BOOI

•

At the end of visiting hours we had to leave and

my heart felt heavy leaving them there, my love for Imaraah felt even stronger after today. After bringing into this world those two beautiful girls who I cannot get enough of, I will forever be grateful to her she has made me a very happy man. Arriving home mama made me clean our bedroom even changed the sheets and prepared everything for the girls, my room was now dominated with pink but I didn't mind I just can't wait for them to come home.

After the long day I had, I recited my prayers once again and I retired to bed. The way I was so exhausted I fell into a very deep slumber, around 9 the next day I woke up and got ready to go see the girls in hospital but before I left my room I called Natasha.

"Kani" - she answered

Me : "Hey baby, you not busy right?"

Her : "I'm getting ready for my shift at work, we

not open yet so we can talk"

Me : "How are you?"

Her : "I'm fine, I just miss you and Junior *sigh*
how are you?"

Me : "I'm good *cleard throat* I have some
news"

Her : "Oh?"

Me : "Yeah, we welcomed the twins yesterday"

Her : *clears throat* "Oh wow umh,
congratulations to you guys"

Me : "Thank you, I just wanted to let you know.
Not keeping anything from you"

Her : "Okay I have to get going"

Me : "Babe?"

Her : "Yeah..."

Me : "I love you okay?"

Her : "I love you even more"

Me : "Junior and I will visit you soon"

Her : "That would be great thank you"

Me : "Okay bye baby"

Her : "Bye Kani"

I hung up then got my wallet along with my car keys then walked out of the bedroom, mama was in the kitchen washing the dishes

Me : "Good morning and goodbye mama"

Her : "Hau Zweli, you didn't eat boy"

Me : "I'll get something on the way ma"

Her : "No sit down, I'll warm your plate"

She maneuvered around the kitchen fixing my plate quietly then warmed it and poured me juice

Me : "ma uright?"

Her : "Yes boy"

Me : "Ohh okay, did you drop off Babalwa?" She

nodded "When is your next session?"

Her : "Tomorrow"

Me : "Have you taken your medication?" She shook her head and I stood up made my way to her room, I looked at her medicine cabinet and her doctor packed everything according to days of the week so I took them to her "don't neglect yourself mama please"

Her : "I hate depending on these pills Zweli"

Me : "but look at how you are now mama please, Babalwa and I need you. More especially Imaraah, she'll need you to help her with the girls so please drink your dosages everyday" she sighed and I gave her some water "Drink up mama"

Her : "okay"

I made sure she took every single one of her pills then ate, I went to Junior's room and he was still sleeping. This boy was lazy yerr, I left

him in peace then bid farewell kumama and drove off to the stores. I first went to the florist and ordered a bouquet of pink roses for Imi & red for Natasha, I could hear she was down in the morning so I wanted to brighten up her mood a little. I paid for hers to be delivered at her workplace then took Imi's bouquet and went to the jewellers to get her something special, a token of appreciation. I didn't know what I'd get her but once I explained everything to the lady who was helping me she suggested that I get her a bracelet with charms on it and each one representing something but the biggest pieces being that which will represent our love & the birth of the twins. I was sold so I purchased it and hoped that she will like it, after going to the jewellers I went to go get her a healthy meal along with some fruits then made my way to the hospital.

When I walked into her ward she was busy with

diaper changes & her mother was alongside her helping. They didn't see me so I greeted

"Salaam alaykum" Imaraah turned and smiled when she saw me

"Wa alaykum as-salaam Kumkani" her mother greeted "Imaraah concentrate"

They finished up what they were doing while I placed the flowers I had gotten Imi next to her bed along with the food but the bracelet I kept in my pocket, Mrs G handed me the girls and helped Imaraah back onto her bed so that she doesn't hurt her stitches. After doing so she gave us privacy, I handed Neeny over to her while I sat with Aminah in my arms.

"baby" she looked up at me "thank you for giving me this opportunity"

Her : "nothing to thank me for Imaad" I sighed and looked at my angel in my arms

Me : "Allahu akbar" (God's the greatest)

"I love you Kumkani" it made my insides tingle hearing her say that

"And I love you maleeka" (queen)

Her : *blushes* "Let's put them down so that I can eat the treats you bought me and you can tell me how ma & Babalwa are doing"

I did as she wishes and she ate her food even made me join her, we spoke about plenty and I could tell she was happy. The twins being here brought her so much joy and they did that to me too.

"Before I forget, I got you a little something" I said that reaching into my pocket, I was sitting next to her on the bed. I took out the box and gave it to her "Just a small token of thanks my love, I hope you like it" she smiled and opened it then looked at me

Her : *smiling* "Thank you baby" she pecked my lips then took it out of its box and looked at

every single detail of it "It's beautiful, I love it" I explained the meaning behind the charms and she blushed even more and I embraced her then kissed the crown of her head, she looked up at me "I love you so much"

Me : "you don't know how happy it makes me hearing you say those words" I cupped her cheek and kissed her "I love you"

I spent the whole afternoon at the hospital then went home late that day, when I got home Junior jumped on his feet and ran towards me

Me : "Hey big boy" I picked him up "Unjani?"
(How are you)

Him : "Philile" (I'm fine)

I greeted mama and she seemed better than this morning, I asked about Babalwa and she told me she was taking a nap in her room because she had a session with her therapist in the afternoon so she was exhausted. I sat in the

lounge with her and bonded with Junior, I decided to text Natasha.

Me : `babe? Didn't you get the flowers I sent you?`

Her : `yes I did thank you. I just didn't want to disturb whilst you were with Iminam and your girls` she sent another one `i love them Kani but I miss Junior now, can't I have him for the night? You'll get him in the morning again please `

Me : `no problem baby, how about we go out for supper? Just the 3 of us then I'll drop you guys off later`

Her : `You sure?`

Me : `Get ready, I'll be there in an hour` she just sent a smiley face then went offline. I looked at mama who was watching the news

Me : "Mama"

Her : "Mh?" Her eyes were locked on the screen

Me : "I won't be joining you for supper today, Natasha asked to have Junior for the night" she looked at me then back the TV and just nodded. I could tell she wasn't impressed so I just stood up and went to bath Junior then dressed him up and told him to go to the lounge, he ran to where mama was while I went to shower then dressed in chilled clothes. There was no need to dress up in the middle of the week.

When I was done, I took my son and we went to get his mom. We went inside the Baartman residence and I greeted, Tash's father was neutral whilst Mrs B was completely off and I understood. After a while Tash came downstairs and we left, she was so excited and couldn't stop talking. Told me about her day, how much she missed Junior and I then asked about Iminam & the twins.

Me : "They are fine, most importantly they are healthy"

Her : "Can I see pictures?" I looked at her then back at the road and handed her my phone "password Zweli"

Me : "Natasha" she punched in her name not believing me but when it unlocked she looked at me blushing "thought I was fooling you haa"

Her : *giggles* "Whatever baby" she looked through the pictures quietly "They are beautiful, look like their father but they didn't get your huge lips though"

Me : *chuckles* "oh they are huge now?"

Her : "so you didn't know?" I stopped at a red light

Me : "But you love these big lips don't you" she bit her bottom lip and nodded, I pouted and we kissed briefly "I love you"

Her : "I love you too baby"

"Hay hay!" That was Junior in the backseat, we

laughed and I drove to my favourite burger joint. Rocco mamas has the best! After supper I drove them home, I'm glad I did this. I didn't want Tash feeling neglected. That night I slept peacefully because I knew both my woman were happy and that made me happy.

"Zweli!"

Me : "I'm coming ma!" I grabbed the 2 carseats then made my way to the lounge "mama?"

"I'm in here boy" that came from the dining hall so I went that

Me : "So much food mama really"

Her : "I wanted to do something small for Imi just a little something to welcome her back home"

Me : "Okay, the Gamildiens will be here any minute"

Her : "Go fetch the girls I can't wait any longer"

she was more excited than I was

I left her in there and went to go put the seats in the car, I went back inside and asked mama if I should go with Junior or she'll be fine with him and she said it was okay I should leave him behind. I drove out of the yard and made my way to the hospital, when I arrived Imaraah was already done and waiting for me.

"Salaam alaykum love" she winked at me and I laughed "are you ready and sorted?"

Her : "Kumkani just sign the discharge papers please baby, I want to get out of these clothes so that my kids can see mommy's face" she was dressed in her traditional wife attire

Me : "Okay, where are they?" She pointed at the table in her ward. I signed the discharge papers then carried the twins and we made our way out.

She helped me get them into their seats and they looked so cute, we buckled up and I drove

us out the parking bay.

Me : "Would you like us to pass somewhere first?" She shook her head

Her : "I just want to get home and sleep in our bed with you beside me" I smiled and stole a quick glance at her then looked back on the road

Me : "You have beautiful eyes"

Her : *giggles* "I'd much rather have that you see my face baby but thank you. I'm so hurt Amira & Aminah took your eyes instead of mine, I wanted them to look like me"

Me : "What can I say, daddy has good strong genes" I said proudly

Her : *laughs* "Yeah yeah" We drove into the yard "my parents are here?" I nodded and she sighed

Me : "Don't be like that" I parked the car in the

garage and we climbed out the car.

I took the girls out with their carseats and she took their small bag then we made our way inside the house. We had a lovely lunch with the Gamildiens but they did not stay long, after they left mama went to the room with Imaraah and the girls while I chilled with Junior for the rest of the day, Babalwa arrived and joined us. After a while mama came to the lounge

Her : "She's taking a nap with the girls" she looked at Babalwa "did you eat?"

Babi : "Yes ma"

Her : "I'm going to lay down, I'm extremely tired"

Me : "Okay mama"

Her : "You guys are gonna have to eat the leftover's from lunch, there's plenty left" we nodded and she went to her room.

I chilled with Junior and Babalwa until it got late

then I went to give him a bath, prepared something for him to eat and myself after doing so I tucked him in bed and went to my room. Maraaah was busy breastfeeding when I came in, I smiled at her and went to take a quick shower before going back to the room with my drawers on and helped her with giving the kids a bath then we laid them on our bed.

Me : "I'm gonna go get you something to eat" she nodded with her eyes locked on her midgets

I made my way to the kitchen and warmed up some leftovers for her with a cup of tea then took them to the room. After she ate she went to go shower leaving me to watch over the kids, they were falling asleep so I put them in their cots and waited for their mother under the blankets. She joined me when sleep was already taking over me.

"Imaad" she whispered

Me : "Mhh?"

Her : "Wake up, I want us to talk" I opened my eyes and turned to look at her, I had been laying on my back.

Me : "What is it baby?"

Her : "Natasha"

Me : "What about her?"

Her : "I want to meet her"

Me : "Imaraah concentrate on the twins for now please, I'll set up a day for you two to meet when I feel you're ready"

Her : "Zwe..."

Me : "Baby no, I said not now" she sighed "now can we get a bit of sleep before these two start screaming"

Her : "okay"

Me : "good night" she turned and gave me her

back "you not gonna give me a good night kiss?"

Her : "no" I sighed and cuddled her from behind before placing soft kisses on her neck

Me : "I love you"

Her : "I love you too" I pecked her shoulder and dozed off.

Insert 25

△

BABALWA

•

Having the girls home has been bliss, they brought about a new energy or should I say aura into the environment. I guess babies do that and I loved it, yes they can scream their damn lungs out at times resulting in sleepless nights for everyone but still I loved having them around. Imaraah would stay in the bedroom

with them all the time, they only came out when Zweli was home. Well I've learnt to ride uber, that's something so I'd get home by myself because Zweli would go to gym after his last class everyday. He was asked to join the team again so he said he had to be fit, I will never understand his love for rugby but it is his passion after all. School has been well school, I'd like to think I've settled in quiet nicely well even Ashley my therapist agrees with me. She's proud of me, that I've opened up to having two friends and that I still made contact with my friend Khwezi from high school. She was studying medicine at UCT so we tried to keep in touch at all times. Ashley made me talk about Lifa a lot and I never understood why because he is just a friend and quiet frankly I think he is gay but she thinks otherwise.

My alarm rang in the morning, I was not impressed not at all because I hardly slept with

the piercing cries of the twins I didn't get enough sleep at all. I turned over and reached for my phone from under my pillow and switched off my alarm before checking my timetable, my class was at 09h40am so I had enough time and it was the only class I had today. I got out of bed and got ready for the day, cleaned my room a little then packed my clothes for practice, Lifa talked me into joining athletics team since I loved long & high jump so much something I've never been serious about but that has changed now I really love it I might even be like Zweli with rugby. I took my bags and made my way to the dinning hall for breakfast, I dropped my bags on the couch only to find the dining hall empty.

"In the kitchen Babalwa!" That was Imi's voice. I went over to the kitchen and she was serving Zweli breakfast

Me : "Good morning" she smiled

Her : "Salaam alaykum, you can sit I'll dish for you"

Me : "okay" I sat next to Zweli

Him : "Vee"

Me : "awe" he chuckled

Him : "These new friends of yours" he shook his head taking a mouthful of food. Imi handed me a plate

Me : "Thank you" she nodded then sat on the high chair next to Zweli and ate too "Where's ma?"

Zwe : "At crèche"

So mama got tired of sitting at home all the time, she got together with a group of women from church and they opened a crèche. It's still new but spends most of her time on it, I think she needed it because the sitting at home the whole time wasn't doing her any good.

Me : "Oh okay"

Him : "Yeah eat up, I'm leaving in 10" I nodded

"Baby don't forget" that was Imaraah

Him : "I won't forget maleeka" I heard a smooch .
gosh can't deal with these two! I kept my head
locked on my plate and ate, knowing Zweli he
will leave me behind if I'm not done & ready to
leave in 10 minutes.

After breakfast I went to place my plate in the
sink then went to go fetch my phone from my
room, I had placed it in the charger. One thing I
never forgot were my earphones, I'd die! I made
my way to the lounge and grabbed my stuff,
Zweli was still in the kitchen with Iminam
talking about God knows what * rolls eyes
dramatically *

"Zweli you said 10 minutes" I said that heading
towards the front door

Him : "Yeah yeah I'm coming"

Me : "I'll wait outside"

I opened the door and went to wait for him by the car. I kept busy with my phone while I waited, I had messages from Fannie and Khwezi so I replied to those while I waited then messaged my mom

`I love you and have a great day` sent

Knowing mama she will probably read it in the afternoon, she never paid much attention to her phone. After what seemed like forever Zweli came out with his bags and we left. He dropped me off in front of Great Hall then drove off. I walked in and sat at a table looking through my assignment that was due in the afternoon, my phone rang. I looked at the ID and it was Lifa

Me : "Good morning soul"

Him : *chuckles* "Well hi there, how are you?"

Me : "A bit tired but I'm good, you?"

Him : "I'm doing great actually, where you at? I just walked into campus"

Me : "I'm sitting in Great Hall"

Him : "Okay I'll be there in five"

Me : "Cool" I hung up and packed my stuff into my bag while I waited. After a while I saw him walk in so I stood up "Here!" He looked my way and smiled, I smiled back.

Him : "Malia"

Me : *giggles* "how many times are you gonna call me that? You don't even know what language it is" we hugged briefly then he sat across me

Him : "I can't remember the language but I know it means queen, I saw it on TV a long time ago and it stuck with me"

Me : "okay whatever you say then, assignment?"

Him : "I got home late, the train kept delaying so

I couldn't type, by the time I got home the internet café was closed. I'm going to type it at the lab after our class"

Me : "I brought my laptop so you can use it"

Him : "You sure?" I nodded "Thanks man, you're a lifesaver" he took out two vetkoeks from his backpack and handed me one. They had chicken livers inside them, he bought me one regularly and I've grown fond of them.

Me : *chuckles* "Thank you, we never really have these at home"

Him : "I know so you much cherish the one's I bring you" I nodded smiling

Me : "I'll have it for lunch, for now let's type your assignment" I checked the time on my watch "we have 30 minutes before our class starts so let's use it"

Him : "Okay"

He took out his paperwork and we got right to it, I helped him here and there but his assignment was pretty much done already just needed to be typed. We only got halfway through it though before having to go to class. After class he finished it off, we printed it at the library then we both went to hand in.

"Practice?" He asked after we walked out of the shop where i bought coldrink for us I nodded

We found a spot to sit and eat.

Him : "Babalwa"

Me : "Mh?" I looked his way

Him : "I was thinking maybe if you could come watch me play this Saturday?" He cleared his throat after saying that

Me : "Play?"

Him : "oh yeah nothing big, I play cricket.

Thought I told you" I shook my head "it's okay if

you can't come I understand, it was.."

Me : "I'll be there"

Him : "What?"

Me : "I'll come" he smiled

Him : "Wow umh okay" he nodded smiling before taking a bite of his vetkoek.

After our little lunch he accompanied me to the field, I waved at coach and she waved back. Lifa handed me my bags

Him : "I'll watch from up there" he pointed at the chairs which had shade

Me : "Okay"

I quickly went to the changing rooms, changed into my sportswear then jogged to Lifa and handed him my stuff and jogged to coach.

"You go girl!" That was Lifa, I looked back him and laughed shaking my head.

After gym Lifa waited with me until my uber came then we bid farewell. When I got home, Imi was in the kitchen busy with supper, I greeted then made my way to my room where I took a nice long bath just to relax my body. After doing so I slipped into my pajamas and a gown then went to the lounge, the twins were laying in their little doughnut pillows awake so I chilled with them until mama arrived then Zweli followed right after her. I helped Imi finish off supper and sat up the table.

"so how were the girls on their visit today? Hope you didn't cry again when they were injected" we laughed that was mom asking Imi about the checkup the twins went to today

Zwe : "oh she didn't cry today but she sulked though"

Her : "I can't help it, they just cry so hard it makes my heart ache"

Ma : "Spoken like a true mother"

Zwe : "Weeee" I laughed pouring myself a glass of juice

Ma : "This is really nice baby what is it?" She was looking at Imi

Her : "Thank you, it's just something my mom taught me a long time ago actually my favourite meal. It's just a simple roast chicken served with chick-pea studded rice pilaf"

Ma : "whoo I love it, you must teach me how to make this rice especially" she smiled

Her : "Okay ma"

Zwe : "Don't be jealous Babi hau, we used to your rice" they laughed

Me : "whatever Zweli, it is whatever. You'll miss my rice one day"

After our lovely supper I cleared the table and washed the dishes, the married couple went to

their room and I watched TV with mama, she asked about school and practice soon she retired to bed because she was falling asleep on the couch so I went to bed too. I had a chat with my friends for a while until sleep took over and I fell asleep.

"Are you going to be fine here?" I unbuckled my seatbelt and grabbed my bag from the backseat

Me : "Yes mama I'm fine here" she was dropping me off at Lifa's game

Her : "Okay where is he? I have to see him before I leave"

Me : "Is that really necessary?"

Her : "You've been friends with this boy for 4 months now so I need to see him" I saw him entering the gate

Me : "There he is, in the black hoodie"

Her : "Now what are you waiting for? Call him"

Me : "Maaa!"

Her : "Okay" she rolled her window down and shouted his name, he looked our direction and ma signalled for him to come over before stepping out of the car. Omg, I felt like sinking into my chair. I stepped out of the car too and went to go stand next to her

"Dumelang ma" he greeted my mom and gave me a smile I smiled back

Ma : "Hello, you must be Lifa?" He nodded

Him : "Ewe ma"

Ma : "Oh Lifa waphi?" (Lifa from where)

Me : "ma he speaks Sotho"

Him : "no it's okay I understand, I'm from Bloem but my brother and I moved here after I got accepted at UWC"

Ma : "And your parents?"

Him : "They passed on ma"

Ma : "Sorry to hear that, what do you want from my daughter?"

Me : "Mama!"

Her : "I'm not talking to you Babalwa"

Him : *clears throat* "I'm not sure I understand ma"

Her : "I'll ask you again what do you want from my daughter?"

Me : "Mama please" I looked at her with begging eyes but she just looked at Lifa

Him : "I like your daughter ma, she's a nice girl although she tries to close herself up so that people don't get near her I really like her. Past few months getting to know her have been bliss but there is no rush with Babalwa, if what you asking is if I'm after what's inside her pants then my answer is no. I want much more than that"

Me : "Mama bye" I quickly grabbed Lifa's hand and walked away dragging him along, even though what he said had left me tongue tied I wish I had let him continue, let him explain what he meant but mama wouldn't have stopped. We got to the gate and I let go of his hand "I'm sorry about that, she can be a bit much at times"

Him : "I understand she's your mom after all" we walked into the field "I'm glad you came"

Me : *smiles* "I am happy to be here supporting you like you do with me" he smiled looking at me then looked ahead.

Insert 26

△

NATASHA

•

What can I say? Life has been a learning curve

these past few months, having to learn to share Kumkani with another woman wasn't easy but I loved him call me crazy but its the truth. I don't see myself with anyone else but him. Having to go to school, work and take care of Junior wasn't easy though but I'd do anything for my son. Yes Zweli sent us money every month but I also wanted to make a contribution. My parents made it clear from the get go when I was pregnant that this child was my responsibility and that they would only support me through it but wouldn't raise him for me because I needed to learn from this, I needed to learn that motherhood wasn't easy and trust me it isn't but he is my son so I don't care. I'll grind for him till the very end.

I woke up Thursday morning in a jolly mood, it was my birthday. Turning 22. I got up and showered, applied lotion on my skin then wrapped a towel around my body before getting

Junior ready for crèche. When I was done with Junior I looked for something to wear, I choose my denim dress along with my white lacoste sneaker. My hair was curled up since I didn't blow dry it so I tied it into a high messy bun.

Me : "How do I look?" I was asking Junior and he nodded "I'll take it you like how mommy looks"

I smiled putting him on the floor and we walked downstairs to the kitchen, he quickly ran to my mom. Dad wasn't in town, away on business.

Me : "Morning mommy" she looked at me and smiled

Her : "happy birthday my angel" she walked around the counter with Junior in her arms and hugged me before placing a peck on my forehead "I'm so proud of you and how far you've come, you have grown so much baby. I hope you make good choices not only for you

but this young man here too okay?" I nodded
"Mommy loves you"

Me : *smiling* "I love you too mom"

Her : "I made you breakfast, you can take your
plate from the microwave"

Me : "Thank you" she left the kitchen with Junior
whilst I warmed my plate and dished some oats
for Jr.

"Nooo its for mommy!" That was my mother's
voice and then I heard Junior screaming his
lungs out, throwing a tantrum. I looked at the
doorway and she walked in with a box wrapped
up nicely and those huge man size teddy bears,
I laughed

Me : "really mom?" I walked towards her and
she handed me the teddy bear

Her : "This is from me, I know how much you
love your stuffed animals and this right here is
from your father" she placed the box on the

counter, Junior was pulling the teddy bears foot so I placed it on the ground for him

Me : "guess we will have to share him" he had already climbed on top of him

Mom : "come on, open it"

Me : *laughs* "I'm sure you know what it is already"

Her : "Just open it Natty"

Me : "Okay! Okay!" I unwrapped the box only to be met by the latest macbook pro "are you serious!?" I smiled excitedly "omgosh I need to call dad"

I rushed to the kitchen door

Her : "Natty wait I still want to take a few pictures!"

Me : "Later mom"

I rushed upstairs to my room and got my phone which was ringing off the hook on my bedside, I

checked the caller ID and it was Zwe

Me : "Baby"

Him : "Tash... Finally I've been trying to call you all morning baby"

Me : "I'm sorry baby, I was busy getting ready"

Him : "no problem babe" he cleared his throat then began singing happy birthday to me "happy birthday princess"

Me : *giggles* "Thank you so much"

Him : "I'm actually outside your house right now"

Me : "You are?"

Him : "Yep"

Me : "Okay I'm coming"

I hung up and rushed downstairs, mom looked at me quizzically

"Zweli is outside, I'll be right back" I said that

rushing out not giving her a chance to speak. As soon as I stepped out of the gate I ran into Zweli's arms and he picked me up

Him : "Hey baby" he kissed my neck repeatedly before putting me down

Me : *smile* "Hi" he pulled me really close to where he was standing before pecking my lips

Him : "happy birthday my baby" he cupped my face and kissed me deeply before gazing into my eyes "Fuck I love you" he pecked my lips and wrapped his arms around me tightly "go fetch Junior, I'm taking you out for breakfast" he loosened his grip on my waist and looked at me "and I booked us a room since well we can't go to the house, is that okay with you?"

Me : "Yes" he pecked my lips again

Him : "Go get Junior, we'll drop him off at crèche then we can go grab a bite okay?" I nodded and he smiled "you look beautiful baby,

22 at its finest"

Me : *giggles* "thank you" I pecked his lips "let me go get Junior"

Him : "Okay boo, I'll wait right here" I walked to the gate "I like how that shirt dress thing you're wearing looks on you!" I looked back at him and he was biting his bottom lip giving me a mischievous smirk

Me : "Thank you" I blew him a kiss before going inside

I ran up to my room and got my bag that had all my stuff along with Junior's backpack then went downstairs and mama was feeding Junior

Me : "Thanks mom, Zweli is going to drop him off at crèche then take me out for breakfast"

Her : "That's nice"

Me : "So I'm going to have to pass the breakfast you made me but thanks mommy" I kissed her

cheek then made Junior's lunch and packed it into his backpack along with some snacks.

I placed everything on the counter and took my presents upstairs to my room, making a mental note to call my dad and thank him for the gift he bought me. When I got back downstairs mom was done with Junior so I grabbed our bags then bid mom farewell before making our way out.

After dropping off Junior, Zweli drove us off to a hotel. The one my dad always had his important meetings in! I looked at him as he parked

Me : "Baby are you serious?" He looked at me smiling as he nodded, I squealed and kissed him "Thank you" I pecked his lips then unbuckled my seatbelt and opened the door stepping out of the car. He chuckled before doing the same and held my hand as we walked in.

Him : "I love seeing that smile on your face" I looked at him and blushed looking down.

He walked to the reception and he sorted out our details then got the room keys and we went upstairs.

"How is my birthday girl feeling?" He asked as he opened our room door, I walked in

Me : "Great, thanks to you" he closed the door and I looked around the room, it was beautiful. I felt him wrap his arms around my waist as he placed his chin on shoulder.

Him : "You love it?" I nodded

Me : "Thank you for doing this" he kissed my neck before standing up straight

Him : "Only the best for you, hungry?" I nodded and he turned me around, we were now face to face. Well not exactly because he was much taller than I was, he didn't say anything but just stare at me

Me : *blushes* "Why are you looking at me like that?"

Him : *smiles* "because I love you so much, I can't believe you're still mine" he placed a soft peck on my forehead and hugged me once again

Me : "I'm not leaving you Zweli" he pulled out of the hug and pulled me to the couch where we sat down

Him : "I know my love, I just feel like you deserve way more than what I'm currently giving you" I looked at him

Me : "Where's all this coming from?"

Him : "Baby I just..."

Me : "are you breaking up with me?"

Him : "What!? Baby no that's absurd!" He sighed "I wouldn't break your heart like that"

Me : "then why are you talking like this?" He

pulled me to lay my head on his chest, I felt him take off my scrunchie then my messy hair fell on my shoulders "Babeeee"

Him : "I like it loose" he gave me my scrunchie then ran his fingers through my hair "you know my father left me his company right?" I nodded "Well that company makes a whole lot of money and well I've been saving" he sighed "I've saved up for Babalwa and I's fees, well including Imaraah'a because she is my wife and I will have to pay for her fees now but that's not my point. My point is, it doesn't feel right having you as my girlfriend anymore" I tried to raise my head but he pushed it back on his chest

Me : "I don't understand Kani"

Him : "I want to take you as my wife now" I swallowed

Me : "Now?"

Him : "Yes Natasha"

Me : "Did you speak to Iminam about this?"

Him : "Yes I did, I wouldn't talk to you about this without consulting her first"

Me : "oh" he made me sit up straight then got off the couch "where are you going now?"

Him : "Nowhere baby" he reached for his inner jacket pocket then took out a small velvet box before going down on one knee. My eyes popped "relax baby" he pecked my lips

"Zwe..." I whispered he just smiled

Him : "I haven't been the best of boyfriend's I know but you've stuck with me until now baby *sighs* and yes I know what I'm asking you isn't easy but we will learn together. We won't know unless we try right?" He chuckled "you don't like sharing, niether does she but I love you. Please say yes. To me, to us as a family with our son, yes to becoming a sister to Imaraah and a second mother to the twins just as she has

been with our son. Do me the honours of being my wife" I just froze "babe" he was starting to look worried

Me : "Wow... I... I don't even know what to say *sigh* what you're asking me is.. Wow I..." He was starting to look disappointed

Him : "Is that a no"

Me : "Of course I will marry your dumb ass" he smiled nervously

Him : "You really got me there fuck!" He slipped the ring into my finger "I love you"

Me : "I love you more" he smiled before attacking me with a kiss and picking me up from the couch, that's how easy it was for him. Those hours spent in gym were really worth it.

I hooked my legs around his waist as he had a firm grip on my ass, I wrapped my arms around his neck as he maneuvered around the room till I felt him place me on top of the bed and got in

between my legs. He pulled out of our kiss and unbuttoned the dress I had slowly and placed it on the couch, I slipped off my one shoe and he helped me with the other.

"You look beautiful baby" he said that looking straight into my eyes

"Thank you Kani" he smiled taking off his jacket then T-shirt and got in between my legs, attacking my lips once again while caressing my thigh and grabbing my ass a few times.

Soon we were both naked and Kumkani had grabbed me to climb on top, I grinded my wet pussy on his hard dick as he had a firm grip on my ass while we kissed. I knew my humping was driving him nuts as he kept cursing in between our kiss tighten the grip he had on my ass. He flipped me over and got in between my legs without breaking the kiss, I felt his fingers opening my folds then rub against my wet moist entrance. He pulled out of the kiss and

looked me

"You wet for me baby?" He rubbed my clit, making circles around it and I released a shaky

"Yesss" I said that in the lowest tone ever, he lowered his head and nibbled on my neck down to my already hard nipples. His fingers left my clit and I felt them enter me, I threw my head back

"How badly do you want it?" His voice deep yet sombre made me release even more juices

"Badly..." He came up to my ear and nibbled on it, I arched my back "Please!"

I lowered my hand to get ahold of his dick but he quickly grabbed both and locked both on top of my head, his lips found their way to mine again that's when I felt the head of his dick against my entrance. He ran it up and down my folds

"Beg for it" fuck Kumkani!

"Baby pleasee!!" I pleaded with him, I felt him enter my pussy and I threw my head back on the pillow as a moan left my lips and a groan from him as he began thrusting inside me. He nibbled on my neck whilst taking deep yet slow strokes and it drove me insane "Fuckkkk! Baby..." He gave me a deep stroke

"Mhh?" He kissed my lips "talk to me baby"

"I want it rough and hard please daddy" I opened my eyes and looked him, he smirked as he threw my legs on his shoulder and took deeper & harder strokes just the way I liked it "omgaaaad Kumkani yeesss!"

He slammed harder into me upping his pace then let go of my hands he hand locked above my head, pulled out of me then stood and pulled my legs before slamming right into me. And I screamed with my back on the bed still fisting the bedding into my hands, he was hitting it in all the right spots.

"Fuck Natashaaa!" He roared throwing his head back and upping his pace some more as he released groans. I knew he was close "fuck baby you on the injection right?" He was still pumping into me and I shook my head "Babyyy come on fuck!" He slowed his pace down before pulling out, I sat up & took him into my mouth. He roared throwing his head back, I flicked my tongue around the head of his dick "I'm about to cum" he fisted my hair and controlled my pace with a few deep throats here & there before he burst his nut and I took it all in, sucking them out of his dick and he released a deep groan mixed with a curse before he pulled his dick out of mouth and I swallowed. He bent over and kissed me before pushing me to lay back on the bed, his kisses descending down to my neck then nipples as he played with my clit before introducing his tongue to it and sucking on it "Zwe..." I arched my back and pushed his head down in between

my legs.

"That was amazing!" He pulled me to lay on top of his chest after our session

Me : "I'm hungry now baby" he chuckled before kissing the crown of my head

Him : "What would you like to eat?"

Me : "What do they offer?"

Him : "The menu is over there baby" he pointed at the coffee table which was in the corner of the room with a phone alongside it "Get it and order something for us to eat then we can take a quick shower"

Me : "Okay" I got up from the bed and walked over to the table

"Sexy ass" I looked back and he winked at me

Me : *giggles* "Stop"

I ordered us a meal, they said it would take 15-20 minutes tops to get ready so Zweli and I

took a quick innocent shower while we waited then slipped into the gowns that were in the bathroom. There was a knock which Zweli attended to while I wrapped a towel around my head.

"baby food!" He shouted from the other room

Me : "I'm coming" I washed my hands then went to join him on the couch, he pecked my lips as soon as I sat down

Him : "happy birthday my love"

Me : "best birthday ever!"

Him : "I try, but its not over yet" I plated up for both of us and we started eating "Imaraah would like to see you"

Me : "I'm sorry, what?"

Him : "You are going to be her sister-wife soon so I told it would happened immediately after you agreed to my proposal" I gulped down my

juice "Relax baby, I'll be there"

Me : "So when are we supposed to have this meeting?"

Him : "Tonight"

Me : "Zwe!"

Him : "I know but please baby, she's been pestering me about it." I sighed "please behave, I know how can get sometimes but please not today okay? She is my first wife and she deserves respect because if she changes her mind then this whole thing stops, I can't do it without her wishes. So please baby be an angel for daddy and behave okay?"

Me : "I know Zwe"

Him : "I'm just reminding you, our future depends on your attitude tonight and I love Imaraah, if you disrespect her then you are disrespecting me and I'm not having that do you understand?" I nodded again "thank you" he

kissed my forehead and continued eating.

Insert 27

△

BABALWA

•

It's morning, I'm ready and prepared for the day. I packed my books that I needed for the day alongside my laptop into my bag, I didn't have practice today so I didn't have to bring fitness gear. Ever since the cricket match, Lifa and I have grown closer but we still remain friends. I doubt I'm ready for that kind of commitment or step as to being in a relationship. Even my therapist Ashley said I should take things slow and she knows best so I'm going to listen to her, I am happy with the fact that he isn't pushing me into anything but rather let everything flow yet still making me feel wanted but I'm still scared. My past haunts me.

I made my way to the dinning hall and everyone was already sitting down. I greeted before sitting down and only mom & Maraah greeted me, bhuti looked sour more like he woke up on the wrong side of the bed. I don't know, he & his wife went out yesterday. He was excited when he left but now I guess whatever they had planned didn't go as planned.

"baby should I make your protein shake to go?" Imaraah asked Zwe who was playing with the food on his plate. She slightly shook him since he didn't respond

Him : "I'm sorry, what?"

Her : "Protein shake? Seeing as you're not really touching your food"

Him : "Nah I'm good" he pushed his plate away and stood up "Let me go get ready, I have a match later today so yeah. Thanks for breakfast ma"

Ma : "you're welcome my boy" he looked at me

Him : "Babalwa" I nodded and he did too before walking out.

Me : *clears throat* "is everything okay?" I asked looking at Imaraah, mom nudged my arm

Her : "Stop being nosy Babalwa"

Me : "Sorry"

Imaraah : "He's just nervous about the game" she cleared her throat "let me go check on him" she stood up and pushed her chair in "excuse me ma, you don't have to worry about the table when you guys are done. I'll clean it up"

Ma : "Okay baby"

Her : "Have a splendid day, both of you"

Me : "You too"

She smiled slightly then made her way out to, I looked at mom and she just shook her head and carried on eating so I did the same.

-

-

IMARAAH

△

I closed the door after walking into our room, I could hear the water running in the bathroom so that meant he was in the shower. I checked on the twins, yes they still shared the room with us, and they were both sleeping peacefully so I decided to take out an outfit for Imaad while he was in the shower. He came out as I laid it out on the bed, he passed me and walked over to the wardrobe scanning it.

"Babe?" He ignored me "Imaad, baby I..."

Him : "I don't want to hear it Imaraah" he took out his puma tracksuit

Me : "I took out your outfit already"

Him : "I'm capable of doing that myself"

Me : "Kumka..."

Him : "Imaraah!" He half shouted then turned to look at me "Not now please okay?"

Me : "I didn't mean to Kani"

Him : "You treated her like trash Imaraah! She is the mother of my child and no disrespect but you know I love her but you go and make her feel worthless like you did last night" I just glared at him, he was fuming "I can't believe you honestly"

He unwrapped the towel that was around his waist and threw it on the floor before grabbing his drawers and putting them on, then he made his way towards the bed and took the clothes I had laid out for him putting them on. When he was done he grabbed his gym bag and folded the tracksuit he took out and put it in there before making his way to the twins cots and pecking their foreheads as they slept.

Him : "Are you coming tonight?" He was talking about his match

Me : "And the kids? Plus I don't want to bother your mom for the second time in a row baby, she & Babalwa have things to do. I can't expect them to babysit for me everyday" he nodded before grabbing his car keys and cell

He made his way towards our bedroom door while I stood by our bed looking at him, he turned to look at me

"I love you"

"I love you more Kumkani"

He sighed as he opened the door and made his way out. Okay, maybe I went overboard last night.

-
-

NATASHA

△

I am done with Zweli and his wife, I'm honestly done with their sick games. As for Iminam treating like some piece of gum stuck to her shoe, calling me names like that *sigh* I've never felt so small in my life like I did at that dinner table last night. I got Junior ready for crèche, I was dressed in my denim jeans with a black crop hoodie along with my black adidas. After breakfast I got my son strapped into his car seat then buckled up and drove out of the yard, as I turned the corner down my street I saw Zweli's car but I didn't stop I still went about my business and drove to my son's crèche. I glanced at the rearview mirror and he was driving behind me, sigh I don't want to see him rn !

My phone rang and it was connected to the Bluetooth in the car, obviously it was Zweli! I didn't answer it. I parked in front of Jr's crèche

and got him out the car, he saw his father in his car and shouted his name so he got out, made his way towards us nervously before taking his son from me.

Him : "Morning" I nodded then grabbed Junior's bag from the backseat and walked to the door, one of his teachers was standing there. We bid farewell to Junior and I swiftly made my way to the car "Baby wait!" I blatantly ignored him until he got ahold of my arm and I shot him a look "I'm sorry" he let go

Me : "Can we not do this now?"

Him : "I just wanna talk Tash please baby, I didn't plan for things to turn out the way they did last night"

Me : *chuckles* "and I'm the fool who is supposed to believe that"

Him : "What's that supposed to mean?"

Me : "this thing going on here may be just a

game to the two of you but to me it's real life okay! And I'm hurting now I will not be called names by someone who doesn't even know me! She called me a homewrecker and a hoe Zweli! That I wanted to break your matrimony with her, like are you serious with me right now, after everything I am the fool again and I'm tired Zweli"

Him : "I didn't know she'd pull the stunt she pulled Tash but I handled it last nigh already baby"

Me : *sigh* "Loving you is hard work Zweli and I'm tired"

Him : "No you can't give up on me Natasha"

Me : "I'm tired of this! I deserve better than this"

Him : "Can we talk somewhere private please?"

Me : "I have places to be"

Him : "But you only have classes in the

afternoon babe"

Me : "What?"

Him : "You gave me a copy of your timetable" I sighed and looked aside, we stood there in silence

"Can we go grab coffee so that we can talk properly?" I looked at him "please baby, please"

Me : "Zwe.." He pulled me into his arms

Him : "One cup then you can leave please mamakhe" he looked at me while running his hands up and down my arms caressing them "Please?"

Me : *sighs* "Just one Zweli"

Him : "yes baby just one"

Me : *nods* "Okay" he gave me a nervous smile

Him : "Can I get a kiss?" I gave him the really look "okay sorry I won't push it" he pecked my forehead and walked me to my door whilst

holding my hand. "You'll drive behind me"

Me : "Cool" I unlocked the car and he opened the door for me "Thanks"

I hopped inside and closed the door, he jogged to his car and turned the ignition on so did I before following behind him till we got to my fav coffee shop. Oh Zweli! it's the little things he does.

"that's all, baby anything else?" I looked at the waiter and shook my head "okay thanks, you can bring me a glass of water so long"

Waiter : "Yes sir" he walked away.

Zwe : "I know you blame me for last night" I nodded "Well I guess I deserve that but baby I spoke to her and explained everything, she was okay before we got there but seems like it all changed when she saw you and I don't blame her okay? This isn't easy for neither one of you, I know what I'm asking is too much but I don't

want you two hurting each other. Hurt me but not each other because I'm not forcing anyone into this arrangement. If you feel you won't be happy with sharing me you're more than welcome to not enter into this polygamist marriage" I swallowed

Me : "I need time"

Him : "okay baby there's no rush, take all the time you need. If you wish to call it off then I'll respect that because it's your happiness at stake here" I nodded

Me : "Thanks munchie" he smiled before giving me a wink.

The waiter came back with his glass of water and gave us privacy again, I'm conflicted now.

•

I'm back, your cries have been heard. Not everyone must suffer cause of a handful, I'm sorry to the loyal readers for the wait.

Do take note : if the page is reported again I'll unpublish this diary.

Diary 28

Δ

IMARAAH

•

As much as I may try to suppress my feelings I cannot hide the fact that the polygamist marriage Kumkani wants is something I really do not want for myself. I wouldn't survive, I thought I'd let him be with Natasha thinking that it was a phase but it persisted on until now and it doesn't seem like it is going to stop anytime soon. It kills me daily when he leaves the house, asking myself whether he is with her or not and what they are doing. Questions that I have to ask myself daily but then pretend to be okay when he gets home, as crazy and stupid as it may sound to many looking into our marriage

and the situation we find ourselves in with Natasha I still love Kani so much. I cannot unlove him.

I tried during those months of being alone through the motions of my pregnancy but I failed, I love him. Natasha was there during his trials with the trauma the family endured because of his father, it's still fresh for him and she actually loves him but I don't think he wants to go there but she gives him a sense of it is going to be okay and I don't want to take that away from him. I want him to be the one to realize what is actually going on and who he actually loves because to be honest we only got married because of our girls so I hold no form of he is mine to have authority. Our marriage needs work, a lot of it. We haven't had a chance to enjoy ourselves as husband and wife because we both weren't ready for this but now I want to give this marriage my all. Call me

crazy but I'm staying with this man. We just have to fix things first, counselling yes that will help! I need to talk to him first though, I don't want to jump the gun.

My thoughts were disturbed by the cries of Amira. I stood up from the bed and took her out of her cot, she immediately kept quiet

"Salaam alaykum pumpkin" I pecked her forehead and woke her sister up. I had to in order to keep peace around here, when the one wakes up the other has to too or else you will dance the whole night. Learnt that the hard way.

I changed their nappies then gave them their bottles, while they laid in the middle of the bed I got their bath water ready and took out the products that I needed along with their outfits for the day. After bathing them, I played with them a little before they took their naps then I went about my business cleaning around the house then showered.

I felt bad that I couldn't go to Zweli's match, I mean it was his first big one now that he was back on the team and I could not be there with him but I'm sure he understood I mean we have kids and I hate troubling his mother all the time. I decided to call him though and he surprisingly answered

Me : "Salaam my love"

Him : "Baby, everything okay?"

Me : "Yes everything is fine, just finished putting them down for a nap and cleaned around the house. Just feel so bad that I'm not going to be there supporting you later"

Him : *sighs* "It's okay, I mean I understand Maraah"

Me : "You do?"

Him : "Yeah, sorry for acting like a jerk this morning I know this isn't easy for you" I cleared my throat

Me : "Can we not talk about that now?"

Him : "Imaraah, can you please just apologize to her? Please, your behaviour was unacceptable"

Me : "I have to go"

Him : "I'm still talking to you"

Me : "Zweli please"

Him : *sighs* "Okay"

Me : "I just wanted to wish you well on your match later, I called now cause I know you'll be out of reach soon. I love you, bye" I quickly hung up before he said anything.

I just didn't want to go into the Natasha issue, it's not something I'm proud of. I said some hurtful things to her that I shouldn't have but jealousy and hurt got the best of me but I will apologize to her though because she isn't at fault here. Zweli is, speaking of Zweli he just sent me a text :

`Okay, I'm sorry. I am a dickhead lately, I don't know what's going on with me but we will talk properly when I get home tonight. I love you more and thank you baby` - Imaad.

I decided not to reply, instead I waited for the kids to wake up and drove to my home. I was fetching my mother, my husband had given me some money to go buy clothes. We spoke about it and he feels it's not necessary for me to wear this traditional wife attire, I was taking my mother with me so that I had an extra hand with me to help with the kids while I shop.

When I parked in front of the house, I called to say I was outside. She came out after a few and joined me in the front.

Her : "mntanam bethuna!" (Oh my child) She hugged me "I miss you so much, this house is so lonely without you Imi"

Me : *smiles* "Hi mommy" I started the car

ignition while she 'greeted' her grandkids

"So unjani Iminam?" (How are you) my mom asked. I glanced at her then back on the road

Me : "Mama, safety belt please"

Her : "Oh sorry baby" she put it on and I stopped at a red light "so how are you?"

Me : "I'm fine mama" I looked at her again, she gave me the really look "mama ndiright nyani (really I'm fine)

Her : " And how is Kumkani treating you?"

Me : *sigh* "He tries"

Her : But..."

Me : "Oh mama it's nothing"

Her : "Haibo Iminam, I'm your mother you can tell me anything"

Me : "Ndiyayaz lonto mama" (I know that) "it's just I don't know if I'm being a good wife to him

or not *chuckles* I don't even know how to be a wife, I'm still getting the ropes of being a mother to the girls. I barely have time for him, I'm always moody. Being in that house 24/7 like a housewife that I am is driving me nuts and I take it out on him. I'm just failing mama and I can see that in his actions"

Her : "Oh my baby" she placed her hand on my shoulder and caressed it "I know you weren't ready for this and I'm so sorry that we had to force your hand but you know your father and how ruthless he can be I mean look at your brother. I'm sure you don't want to end up like him" I shook my head "You'll get the hang of things, just focus on your kids and husband. Don't abandon him now, he can't feel unwanted. A man wants to feel needed baby you can't neglect him, find ways to bond with don't think sex is all that's needed cause it's not" I laughed "don't laugh I know you have sex the proof is in

the seats behind us"

Me : "We haven't had sex ever since the kids were born"

Her : "But that was almost 7 months ago Iminam"

Me : "I know mama, I'm just never in the mood for sex. All I do is look after the kids, clean and cook. Sex isn't even a factor in my life"

Her : "He doesn't even initiate it?"

Me : "mama come on" I wasn't really comfortable discussing my sex life with my mother

Her : "Talk Imi"

Me : "He does, I mean he used to until he got tired of me turning him down all the time now he gets it from Natasha"

Her : "So you're pushing him into her arms, if you don't want this marriage just leave it

Imaraah"

Me : "I didn't at first but now I do ma, I can feel myself loosing him and I can't bare this feeling it kills me"

Her : "Then be a wife to your husband, salvage this marriage"

Me : "Ewe mama"

We had arrived at the mall a long time ago but we sat in the car because of this conversation. We got out and she helped me feed the girls before we went inside and begun shopping because what you don't want is a screaming child in the damn shopping centre!

By the time we finished with the shopping I was exhausted to say the least, we went to get something to eat then I ubered my mom home because I was too tired to drive over that side of town then again all the way home. Mom understood, I even bought her a token of thanks

and she said I should make use of her offer. She wanted to babysit the girls but I never really use her offer cause I never really go anywhere but I understood that she wanted to spend sometime with her grandkids.

When I arrived at the house the kids were sleeping, I took them inside first then fetched the shopping bags and took a nap with them. By the time I woke up it was around 7, yoh I really slept in. The kids were awake but quiet, awww babies knew that mommy is famished and needed rest. I quickly freshened up then went to the lounge, placed them in their safety chairs with some cartoons on then got started on supper while I fed them on the side and ate my warmed takeouts on the side too. Ma came into the kitchen while I was busy, she was already in her pajamas

Me : "Mama, I didn't know you were home"

Her : "I saw you were sleeping so I decided to

take a relaxing bath"

Me : "I'm sorry about the late supper but I'll be done soon. Would you like a cup of tea?"

Her : "Yes please, Babalwa went to go watch her brother play"

Me : "Oh I didn't know"

Her : "I'm surprised you didn't go, is everything okay?"

Me : "All is well ma, I just didn't want to bother you by asking you to look after the girls again"

Her : "I don't mind though, I enjoy spending time with them. They aren't much trouble"

Me : *smiles* "Thank you, you can go sit. I'll bring your tea to you" she nodded smiling and walked out of the kitchen.

I quickly made her cup of tea and took everything to her on a tray then finished up with supper. After eating I washed the dishes and

went to the bedroom with Aminah and Amira so that I could bath them before their father got home, halfway through I heard his voice in the lounge he didn't sound down or anything so that meant they played a good game. It wasn't long until he entered our room.

"my girls"

Me : "Daddy" he smiled before coming to smack his lips on mine "good game?"

Him : "Great game, not to blow my own horn but we put up a great match" he sat down next to me and helped me dress the girls up in their pajamas

Me : *giggles* "Okay, go shower. I'll warm up your plate and give you a massage"

Him : "We already had something to eat" he stood up after placing Aminah in the middle of the bed with her bottle "but I'll take that massage offer"

Me : "now go while I put them to sleep"

He made his way to the bathroom as I finished off and gave my angel her bottle too, I cleaned up the room and put their stuff away then dimmed the lights. After a while they fell asleep so I put them in their cots, changed into my nightwear and got the massage oils.

I gave him the massage quietly and he thanked me when I was done, I went to go wash my hands and when I returned to our room he was already inside the blankets.

"can we talk?" I asked as I approached our bed. He wasn't sleeping, just laying on his back starring at the roof. He sat up

Him : "Yeah sure" I joined him

Me : "I don't know where to start..."

Him : "Just speak your mind" I cleared my throat

Me : "I realize that I have not really been much

of a wife to you, yes I may cook and clean after you but when it comes to loving you and giving myself to you I've failed. Not only because of Natasha but I felt as though this marriage was forced onto me and I wasn't ready, we weren't ready for it..."

Him : "But we are here baby"

Me : "Yes we are and it saddens me to see how we've turned out, a lot has transpired. Events I didn't think would happened, we had 2 beautiful girls although unplanned they are my life, everything I am I put into them and in the process of me being a mother I've neglected you and I realize that. It's just difficult especially since there is another party involved in this marriage, I'm sorry but I thought it was just a phase of hurt since you lost your father well the idea you had of him and I know that wasn't easy for you Kumkani so I let you do as you please to grieve the loss of someone who played a huge

role in your life. Yes what he did was sick but you loved him so him being sent to jail killed you now I'm going to ask you, do you really love Natasha or the idea of her being there during that period and helping you through it?"

Him : "What kind of a question is that? I mean..."

Me : "Zwe, just answer my question please. Do you love her or is she just your sense of a safe place, a sense of salvation?" He kept quiet "Kumkani" he looked at me as he gave what I had just said some thought then ran his hands on his face.

Him : "I don't know" he sighed then looked up at the ceiling "I can't explain, I don't know"

Me : "Well I'll tell you this, I'm willing to give this marriage my all as long as you agree to see someone about what you went through that whole period. I'd also like for us to go for marriage counselling..."

Him : "I don't need to talk to anyone about my problems Iminam, I'm not crazy okay? I don't need a shrink" he peeled off the blanket on his side and attempted to step out of bed

Me : "Zwelibanzi I am tired of this self pity party you have been hosting for yourself, you do need help and you will choose between Natasha & I because I will not under any circumstances share you. Hell no! I love you and myself too much to do that, it's either we fix this or I'm leaving" he turned to look at me

Him : "What?"

Me : "no Zweli no, this has gone on for far too long. You might think you're in control but you're not baby you're not! Emotionally you're a mess and the sooner you realize that the better, this between you, Natasha and I isn't healthy for any of us" he stood up and slipped his sleepers on

Him : "I think I need some air"

Me : "While you're out there it will do you good if you give what I've just said some thought. I care about you but this is toxic and there's kids involved so please, neither Junior or the girls need this. Make a decision"

I turned to lay on my side and covered my body with the duvet while he stood there, I waited to hear his footsteps leaving the room but instead I felt him getting into bed again. I sighed then switched off my lamp.

"Good night" I said as I fluffed my pillow

Him : "good night"

If this talk doesn't make a breakthrough then I don't know but I will leave. I'm not saying he should leave Natasha, even if he doesn't choose me and goes to her instead I'll leave gracefully but I do love him and I hope he loves me just as much or enough to choose me even though our marriage needs work because at this very

moment I do not trust him at all not with the way he has been acting.

Insert 29

△

BABALWA

•

I had just gotten home after a fun filled day and 2 gold medals, not only that but Lifa confessed his feelings towards me. Not that I didn't know but he laid it all out and to top it all off he said he won't rush me into anything because he feels I'm not ready, I don't know if I'm ready either but I love the feelings that burn inside me when I am by his side although they scare me. I love how he makes me feel but I fear that I'll trust him then he will turn out to be just like the man that I loved and trusted with my life. My father.

On a lighter note he asked if he could spend the

day with me tomorrow, tomorrow is Saturday. He said we were going to explore but didn't go into details, I don't know but I'm excited at the same time I'm nervous. Nervous about how it will all go, nervous because I don't want to mess everything up or worse he sees the fragile girl who was molested by her father inside me. That scares me, I'm scared of what he will think of me once he discovers that about me or if he'll stick see so much good in me.

"Babalwa!"

"Ma?" She came to open my bedroom door then stuck her head out

Her : "It's time for supper baby"

Me : "I'm not hungry" she came in and closed the door behind her

Her : "uright Vuyelwa?" (Are you okay)

I was laying sideways on my bed facing the wall

Me : "I'm fine" I felt her placing her weight on my bed

Her : "Look at me baby" I turned to face her
"Now talk to me, what's bothering you?"

Me : "I'm scared" she moved closer to me and held my hand

Her : "Scared of what my angel?"

Me : "remember Lifa?" She nodded "he told me he really likes me" she nodded again "but feels I'm not ready for a relationship"

Her : "Is that true?"

Me : "I don't know, I think so too"

Her : "now what are you scared of Babalwa?"

Me : "Mama what if he no longer likes me once he learns about what happened to me?"

Her : "if he truly likes you the way he claims to then you don't have to worry about that, he will support you where needed and won't make you

feel any worse about what you went through. Only an inhuman person would make you feel bad about that experience, if his feelings for you changes there is no need to beat yourself up about it. You will meet someone else in future and you're still young baby you shouldn't even be thinking about relationships focus on school please"

Me : "He's my friend. My special friend"

Her : "but the feelings you have for him as a friend are way different to those you have for Fanisa as a friend. For you to even feel this way you are looking at something bigger" she sighed "but I trust you to be responsible, I don't want you turning out like your brother, he has problems he shouldn't even be having at his age but that's not the point here. I want you to make good choices, choices that will contribute to you having a great future"

Me : "I know mama"

Her : "I know you see Ashley as the person to talk to but I want you to also come and talk to me if you need anything okay?"

Me : "Okay" she kissed my forehead

Her : "Now come eat"

Me : "Ma I said..." She stood up

Her : "Babalwa you know supper as a family is important" she walked to the door "I'm not going to repeat myself, I expect you at that table in 2 minutes. Siyavana?" (Do we understand each other)

Me : "Ewe mama"

Her : "Good" she opened the door and walked out leaving it open.

Sigh, I stood up and wore my slip ons before having a quick glance in front of the mirror checking whether I was representable or not and I was, so I made my way to the dinning area

and everyone was already sitting in their respective places.

"Evening" I said sitting down and they greeted back

"You can bless the food Vuyelwa" ma said as she took my hand into hers

I bowed my head and blessed the food then we dug into our meal in silence and I did the dishes right after. I remembered I had to tell my mom about tomorrow so after washing the dishes I made her a cup of tea and took it to her in the lounge

Her : "Oh thank you baby, can you bring me my ginger biscuits"

Me : "okay" I went to go get them in the kitchen then gave them to her before sitting down next to her and watching the TV, after a while I decided to finally speak "mama"

Her : "Mh?"

Me : "Lifa asked if I could spend the day with him tomorrow"

Her : "Spend the day with him where?"

Me : "he didn't really give me details ma just that it was going to be an adventure"

Her : "Well if he wants to spend the day with you then he will come take you apha endlini (here at home) so that I can have a word with him"

Me : "Is that really necessary?"

Her : "It's either that or you are not going"

Me : "Okay" I stood up "good night, I'm going to bed" she nodded and focused on the reality show she was watching on tv

I made my way to my room, took off the gown along with the push ins I had on and slipped into my blankets with my phone in hand. The plan was to call Lifa, as soon as I got comfortable I decided to ring him up.

"Hello" a tiny cheerful voice answered

Me : "Hey sweetie, how are you?"

"I'm fine thanks and you?"

Me : *giggles* "I'm okay, where's Lifa?"

"Who am I speaking to qala?" (First)

Me : "Uthetha no Babalwa"

"Ohh Babalwa ka bhuti, bhuti akekho. Ndim othethayo" (my brother's Babalwa, my brother isn't home. You're talking to me)

Me : *giggles* "Wena ungubani kaloku?" (Who are you)

"Bandile, yandaz mna?" (do you know me). He's so cute!

Me : *smiles* "A.ah tell me"

Him : "Lifa ngu bhuti wam, I'm 8 years old mna. Funda Grade 2 and you?" (Lifa is my big brother... I'm in Grade 2)

Me : "I'm 18 years old, funda Grade 13" (I'm in Grade 13)

Him : *laughs* "yaphosisa sisi, akekho Grade 13" (you're lying, there isn't a grade 13)

Me : "uzubuze ubhuti wakho keh" (ask your brother then)

Him : "ewe zombuza njena bhuti soze aqhathe uBandile" (yes I will, he never lies to Bandile)

Me : *giggles* "that's good, tell him I called okay?"

Him : "Yima! Zokubona nini?" (Wait when am I going to see you?)

Me : "Soon vah"

Him : "When is soon?"

Me : *giggles* "I'll surprise you"

Him : "I like surprises"

Me : "me too kesana"

Him : "Nanku bhuti" (he's here) I heard shuffling
then his deep voice

"Hello?" I melted immediately a smile formed on
my lips

Me : *smiles* "Hey" clears throat "it's me
Babalwa"

Him : *chuckles* "oh hey you, sorry I had to go
get Bandile snacks at the tuckshop"

Me : "he's such a cutie pie" he laughed

Him : "Yeah right! I hope he didn't trouble you
though"

Me : "No not at all, I called with regards to
tomorrow"

Him : "Yeah?"

Me : "Mom says she'll have to talk to you first
before she let's me go"

Him : "Okay cool no problem"

Me : "You don't mind?"

Him : "no not at all"

Me : "Okay I'll send the location so that you can uber here"

Him : "uh yeah sure"

Me : "Lifa are you okay?"

Him : "Yes baby why wouldn't I be" I blushed so hard at the sound of him calling me 'baby'. Omg I'm sure my cheeks are red right now! they even began hurting because I had been smiling from the moment I started speaking to his brother now here he comes along... "Baby are you there?" Oh totally forgot I was still on the phone with him

Me : "mh? Urr yes, yes I'm here. I'm here" I cleared my throat

Him : *chuckles* "okay, I'll see you tomorrow then. Don't want you running out of airtime

because of me"

Me : "what? No we could talk the whole night even"

Him : "good night, we will do that when I call you right now I have Bandile who needs me"

Me : "oh yes sorry..."

Him : "don't be, it's okay baby. Oh he wants to say good night"

Me : *smiling* "okay"

"Sisi?"

Me : "Hello boy"

Him : "bhuti akafun ndithethe mna ndiqumbile"
(Lifa doesn't want me to talk I'm sad)

Me : "xolo boy, I'll call you tomorrow again vah?"
(Sorry)

Him : "nyan nyan?" (Really)

Me : "I promise"

Him : "zoyithatha phone ka bhuti keh ngomso ndilinde wena" (I'll take his phone tomorrow and wait for your call)

Me : *giggles* "okay boy, good night vah"

Him : "sleep tight, don't let the bed bugs bite"

Me : *laughs* "okay boy, I won't"

Him : "Byeeee!"

Me : "Bye!"

"Bye baby" Lifa's deep voice again

Me : "Bye" I said shyly "good night"

Him : "sleep well beautiful"

Me : *smiles* "You too" he hung up and I slept peacefully.

The following day I woke up and cleaned my room before going to take a shower and washing my hair, with a towel wrapped around my body & head I went back to my room and sat

in front of the mirror. I blow dried my hair and tied it up into a bun then put on my underwear, I didn't know what to wear since I didn't know where we were going so I decided to call him.

"Sisi!"

Me : "hello Bandile"

Him : "You kept your promise"

Me : "Of course I did, I always keep my promises"

Him : "bhuti uthi a person who keeps their promise is good, are you good wena sisi?"

Me : *smiles* "I guess so" we spoke some more before he gave the phone to his brother

"Don't worry yourself beautiful, I'm coming" he said as soon as he got the phone

Me : *giggles* "I was just checking in"

Him : *chuckles* "I'm sure, you good?"

Me : "all good but I don't know what to wear"

Him : "A pair of jeans and sneakers should be fine"

Me : "Okay, are you ready?"

Him : "yep, be there in an hour"

Me : "can't wait"

Him : "neither can I, listen I have to bounce now baby. See you in a few"

Me : "Okay bye"

Him : "Bye"

"Byeeeeee!!" Bandile shouted in the background. I laughed before hanging up.

I decided to take out my denim jeans with my black nike and a black plain T-shirt along with my simple gold neckpiece and watch then went to go eat and wait for Lifa.

Insert 30

△

BABALWA

•

I had some fruit salad, I was hungry but too nervous to eat so I chose fruit salad since it was easy on the stomach. After eating the salad I went to go sit in front of the TV in the lounge, the television set was watching me instead of me watching it that's how nervous I was and don't ask me why because I don't know either. It wasn't long before my mom joined me on the couch, Iminam and Zweli went to the Gamildien house this morning so it was only my mother and I at home.

"Are you sure he's coming?"

"Yes ma, he did say he is on his way"

Her : "I'm just asking baby"

Me : "It's still early for you to..." My phone rang

disturbing me from finishing my sentence, it was him. I jumped off the couch excitedly "Excuse me" I made my way to the kitchen while I answered the phone "Hey"

Him : "Baby" I blushed

Me : "Hi"

Him : "I hope you're ready cause I'm here"

Me : *squeals* "Right now?"

Him : *chuckles* "what was that? Of course right now" I composed myself

Me : "Nothing, absolutely nothing. I'll come get you" I stood in front of the fridge since it had a mirror

Him : "Okay don't be long"

Me : *giggles* "I won't"

He hung up and I quickly fixed myself even though it wasn't necessary, I just felt like I had to be perfect somehow. When I was satisfied

with my reflection I walked out of the kitchen

"mama he's here, I'm going to let him in!" I shouted as I approached the door

Her : "Okay baby"

I walked out and made my way out to the front gate, when I opened the gate he was standing across the road from my house looking around from me I guess. He was dressed in very dark grey almost black skinny jeans which were not too tight as always, with his black adidas, black tshirt, black jacket and a cap. He looked good I must say. As soon as I came out the gate he looked my way and smiled before jogging towards me. Our neighborhood was a quiet one, barely any cars in the street so he was safe. When he stood in front of me we shared a brief hug which he sealed off with a kiss on the forehead

"Hey beautiful" I smiled

Me : "Hey"

Him : "How are you? Ready for the day?" We started making our way back inside the yard

Me : "I'm good thanks, wena?"

Him : "Great now that I'm here with you, looking beautiful as always" I couldn't help but blush

Me : "Stoop"

Him : *smirks* "What? Telling you how beautiful you are? Because it's the truth" I looked at him then at the door in front of us

Me : *smiles* "Thank you" I was about to open the door when he stopped me "What?"

Him : "Am I mother in law presentable?"

Me : *laughs* "yes very much so" he dusted off the invisible dust from his shoulders

Him : "Thanks, I mean what can I stay" he was being cocky

Me : *smiling* "Let's just go inside so that we can go" I opened the door and he walked in but stood right where he was since he didn't know his way around the house "she's in the lounge" he nodded. I closed the door "ma!"

"Come this side Vuyelwa" my mom shouted, he looked at me but I quickly looked away

He chuckled and whispered "Vuyelwa" I quickly nudged him with my elbow before we appeared in the lounge. As soon as we got there we stopped playing around and he took off his cap, mom looked our way and he greeted

"molo ma"

"ewe boy, nice to see you again" he walked towards her and shook her hand

Him : "likewise Mrs Boo!"

Her : "Please sit" she looked at me "can you go make me a cup of tea please"

Me : "ma?" She gave me that now look "okay,
Lifa would you like anything?"

Him : "Just a glass of water"

Me : "Coming right up"

I made my way to the kitchen and I could hear them talking but I could not make out what they were saying, I guess that's what my mom wanted. To exclude me from whatever they were talking about. While the water for my mom's tea boiled I placed the utensils for her cup of tea on a tray and warmed her milk in the microwave then took out a bottle of water for Lifa from the fridge along with a glass and placed those on the tray too.

When I was done with everything I took the tray to the lounge and mom stopped talking, I looked at Lifa and he smiled. Okay that's a good sign I guess, my mom thanked me as I gave her the cup of tea so did Lifa for his water. Just as I

was about to sit down

"oh Vuyelwa baby you forgot my ginger biscuits"

Me : "Sorry ma, I'll bring them now"

I stood up and went to fetch them then I gave them to her, I got the message loud and clear now. I was needed so after giving her the ginger biscuits I went to my room and took my black sling bag, put a few notes in there along with my lipgloss and cellphone. I also decided to grab my black jacket since I didn't know what time we would be back.

"Babalwa!"

"I'm coming"

I quickly made my way to the lounge and Lifa was on his feet looking like he was ready to go

Ma : "You may go, I already had a word with him. He knows what I expect and don't expect of

him."

Me : "Thanks ma"

Her : "Take your keys, I'm going to church late afternoon and I don't know when your brother is coming back" I hugged her

Me : "See you later"

Her : "enjoy" she let go of me "now go have fun"

I smiled before walking to where Lifa was standing

"Lifa" that was my mom

Him : *chuckles* "I won't forget ma"

Her : "good, take care of her or else"

Him : "I'll keep my word, enjoy the rest of your day"

Me : "okay let's go already!"

I pulled him out into the passage then grabbed my keys on our way out from the key holder and

we left.

Me : "So where are we going?" We had just walked out my yard

Him : "We taking a little trip with a whole lot of pit stops hope you had enough rest"

Me : "What does that mean?"

Him : *laughs* "nothing, come let's go"

Me : "Where to?"

Him : "bus stop"

Me : "Seriously?"

Him : "I saw one on my way here not so far away. You don't mind right?" I shook my head

Me : "no I don't, just that I've never been on one before"

Him : "Well we are going to use it today, come let's go" we started walking "can I hold your hand?"

Me : "I'm sorry, what?"

Him : *clears throat* "no never mind, I'm pushing it. Sorry" we walked in silence for a short while

"You can" I said joining my hand with his, our fingers intertwined. He looked at me and smiled then looked ahead. Secretly, I smiled too.

"Do you trust me?" He asked

"why do you ask?"

"do you?"

"I...I don't know, I think I do"

Him : "I want you to trust me the same way I trust you"

Me : "You trust me?" I asked a little surprised and he nodded without hesitation

Him : "I have no reason not to" he glanced at me then back on the road ahead of us, I could see the bus stop at a distance "have I given you

reason not to trust me?"

Me : "no" he glanced at me once again but a little longer this time then nodded

Him : "okay"

We walked the rest of the distance quietly with me questioning myself, what he had just asked me left me with question marks. Do I trust him? I think I do I mean he really hasn't done anything to make me think otherwise I just fear for the unknown, fear for the hurt and disappointment that comes with trusting someone. I know it's unfair of me to think this of him cause he hasn't done anything wrong but I do and I can't help it.

"baby?" He pulled me to stop walking

"Mh?"

"You okay?" He stood in front of me and looked into my eyes, holding both my hands and I nodded absent mindedly

"Yesss" he smiled before kissing my forehead, I guessing this was becoming a habit

Him : "I asked if you trust me or not because trust is important in any kind or form of relationship whether it be friendship or romantic, it's vital and I'd love for you to trust me. It's the only way for us to get to know each other better. I want to let you into my life but how will I do that if you don't let me into yours? I'm not pushing baby I just want us to have trust between us okay?" I nodded "don't close yourself in around me I want you to be free. I've only seen tiny glimpses of the free Babalwa and I'd love to see more of her. The real you" he looked back "there's our bus"

He signed for the bus to stop, we got in and he paid before we sat on a two sitter chair. I can't believe this was my first time on a bus and the thing I loved was that it wasn't full. We sat there quietly, hands locked with each other and his

thumb caressing mine. I don't know but I found myself laying my head on his shoulder and he let me.

We didn't stay in the bus long though we got off at the next bus stop, he said he wanted us to try some ice cream shop he had seen closeby, after getting the ice cream we walked while we ate and conversed some more then caught the next bus. Passed only two stops and got off at the next went into some shop that sold some nice items, he even bought me a souvenir necklace then something for his brother before going to a gatsby shop which was a first time for me again! But he reckoned I'd enjoy it since I loved food and we were pretty hungry, when it came we dug in as huge as it was but we didn't finish it it was too much. He put what was left in the plastic bag for his brother and we walked out, found a park where we went full on childish from swings to slides I mean

everything ! after a while he suggested we take the next bus to the nearest beach so we took our stuff and walked in pursuit to find a bus stop

"I am sure this isn't your ideal outing but I..."

Me : "I love it"

Him : "you having fun?" I nodded and smiled "I'm having fun too, I enjoy your company" we hugged

Me : "You're a real hugger aren't you"

Him : *chuckles* "What can I sa... Baby don't look back okay just run as fast as you can"

Me : "What?" I tried to look back but he held me in place before screaming run Babalwa then heard a loud bark, I didn't need anymore motivation I sprinted as fast as I could so did he! We were being chased a dog. I almost ran into the road but he quickly got ahold of my hand and pulled me back

"It's gone" he said out of breathe. We slumped on the pavement, I looked back and the owner had just put a leash on it "Voetsek!" He screamed and I looked at him before busting into laughter so did he

Me : *trying to catch my breathe* "it's a little too late don't you think"

Him : *laughs* "there wasn't time to swear then okay!"

We had our last few laughs before going to the bus stop yet again and got onto a bus to the beach, when we got there it was already getting late.

"Just in time for the sunset" he said as we walked to the staircase leading to the sand

Me : "cheesy much" he shrugged

Him : "come sit over here" he pat the bench next to the staircase and he took off my sneakers before rolling up my jean a little then sat next to

me and did the same.

Before we walked down the stairs, he put Bandile's things in the backpack he had on then held our shoes in hand while holding my hand in the other as we made our way down to the shore.

"This is beautiful" we were sitting on a rock looking at the sunset

Him : "Thank you for coming"

Me : " Thank you for inviting me, I truly had an amazing being chased by a dog and all"

Him : "Well I'm glad you enjoyed it, sorry about that dog baby"

Me : *giggles* "Its okay" I pecked his cheek and laid my head on his shoulder.

After a while we had to go, we used bus once again and he insisted on dropping me off in my neighborhood then he will catch another bus

home. So we did that, had three longest hug ever to seal off our outing with him thanking me the whole time, lots of forehead kisses and I'm glad he didn't initiate a kiss although I'm sure he wanted one he respected my need for time.

Insert 31

△

ZWELIBANZI

•

What Iminam said made sense even though I didn't want to admit it, this whole situation I put the 3 of us in was unfair to the two of them and although I may try to make each one happy the other lacks in a different department. I should just let the whole idea go seeing as I'm hurting both the women I myself claim to love. I might

not want to admit it but I'm a married man with a wife who deserves way more than what she is getting and I am the one who put the two of us in this marriage yet I haven't tried making it work. As for Natasha, I keep hurting her more than I actually make her happy, she deserves way more especially after everything she has done for me and that's why I think it's best I let go. I have a lot on my plate, the kids, school, the company and my team, I shouldn't be worrying about two women but I guess I deserve it for being selfish, I want to right my wrongs I really do. I don't know where Iminam and I stand but I have to at least try to make this marriage work before even thinking of calling it quits, I've put in too much to just let it all go.

After spending the day with my in laws, Imaraah and I decided it was time for us to go as it was getting late so we bid farewell and left but I still had to go fetch Junior from his mother's house

so I dropped off my 3 girls at home before driving there.

"I'm outside"

"okay, we'll be there just now" I hung up and stepped out of the car, opened the back door and just stood there waiting for her to come out with Junior. It wasn't long until she came out of the gate with Junior in her arms covered in a fleece blanket and his bag in the other hand so I approached her to lend a hand

Me : "Hey" I took the bag and we walked to the car

Her : "Hi" I looked at Junior "he just woke up"

Me : "Oh sorry I couldn't make it earlier, I was busy"

Her : "No problem"

I placed the bag in the car then took Junior from Tash and strapped him in his car seat then

closed the door. I turned around to face Tash who was standing behind me with her arms folded against her chest area

Me : "So how are you?"

Her : "I'm fine, just tired work and school then Junior." She sighed "I just need a break" I swallowed because I realised that I also wasn't making her life any easier in fact I was adding on unnecessary stress and to be honest I'm only realising now how selfish I've been, I was so focused on me and what I want that I didn't take into account how I was hurting both Natasha and Iminam.

"are you okay?"

Me : *sigh* "I'm fine, have you thought about you know..."

Her : "Yes I did and I don't know if this is what I want Zwe" I nodded

Me : "I guess I was selfish to ask it of you or

Iminam" she looked at me puzzled

Her : "What are you trying to say?"

Me : "Can we talk properly about this tomorrow or something? We can't do this now, our son is in the car and we need to get going"

Her : "Oh o-kay" I hugged her

Me : "You deserve way more than this" I pulled out of the hug and looked at her "I'm sorry about everything"

Her : "Zwe uright?" I forced a smile

Me : "I'm fine, go inside it's cold"

Her : "Zwe..."

Me : "Go inside princess" I gently fisted her hair and kissed the crown of her head "good night"

Her : "night"

I let go of her and she slowly walked away, I watched her until she got inside then stepped

into the car and looked at Junior who sat quietly in his seat with his two toys in hand.

"U'grand mfethu?" He nodded "sure?" I stuck out my thumb for him so did he

Him : "shooo" I smiled then drove us straight home.

We got there around 8, when we arrived everyone was in the lounge except Iminam, Junior ran to his grandma. I greeted then made my way to the kitchen as I could smell the aroma coming from there and I could tell Iminam was the cook. When I got there, I stood by the doorway and watched as she owned the kitchen in her black long sleeved maxi dressed the fell perfectly over her curves. She was petite, with a tiny figure. Her ass wasn't huge rather just right for her small body and her boobs well she never really had huge boobs either until she had the girls.

She didn't turn around to account for my presence so I made my way behind her and snaked my arms around her waist, she jumped a little but I held her in place

Me : "It's me" I bent over a little and pecked her neck , she relaxed "hey" she turned around

Her : "Hi" she looked at me as if she was trying to read what happened while I was with Tash

Me : *sigh* "Nothing happened" I hugged her and she just stood there frozen, ever since the twins came I've been treated like this that I even stopped showing affection. I don't blame her though I do deserve it..

Her : *clears throat* "Kumkani, let go"

I don't know how I'm going to fix the mess I've made, I've hurt her no going around that but I want to fix that now. She did NOTHING wrong, she was the best girlfriend ever before everything in my life went south and I left her

out in the cold. I made her like this.

I let her go and she turned her attention back on the pots, I got a bottle of water from the fridge and sat on one of the high chairs, took out my phone and checked the emails the CEO of the company had sent to me. It was mostly demographics on how the company was doing and I must say ever since I placed her in charge the turnover has been amazing, my bank account is smiling. In fact I think I should buy a house for my little family and I. Living with mom and Babi is great and all but I need my own space.

"Tata!" Junior screamed cheerful as he crashed into my legs that were hanging from the chair and I picked him up

"boy, did you say hi to aunt Imi?" He shook his head shyly "go say hi" he nodded and I put him on the floor.

I looked at Imi as she watched him run around the counter to her side before he threw himself into her arms.

Her : "Look at you!" He hugged her "oh hi, looks like someone missed me" he looked at her and nodded

Him : "mh.hm"

Her : *smiles* "Well I missed you too big boy, did you say hi to your little sisters?"

Him : "Yessss!"

Her : "And what did they say?"

Him : "an-yaz mna" he shrugged (I don't know)

Her : "I also don't know bathini (what they are saying) boy but that's our little secret mos neh?"
He nodded excitedly "don't tell tatakho" he giggled

Him : "soze mna nimxelele" (I'll never tell him)
his speech wasn't proper, he was only 4 after all.

Me : "Hey stop gossiping about my girls" he hid his face in her neck

Imi : *giggles* "tell your daddy not to be jealous of aunt Imi and Junior's relationship, mxelele" (tell him) he turned to look at me and I shot him a look, he pat Imi on the shoulder

Him : "daddy uthi kum" he imitated the look I had just given him

Her : "sorry, don't worry ndizom summarizer" (I'll sort him out) he nodded naye "now go watch the girls for me okay then we are gonna eat"

Him : "Okay" he wiggled himself out of her arms and ran out.

She smiled as she turned off the stove and took out the dishes, she called Babalwa to come help her by setting the table. Before long we were done eating and I offered to wash the dishes which stunned everyone but I did it anyway, after doing so I poured warm water into

the girls flusk for their bottles at night before making their bottles for now before bed.

"Good night Zwe!"

Me : "Night ma!"

Her : "don't forget to bring Lubanzi's bottle"

Me : "Okay"

His mother doesn't want him to stop this milk thing, he even asks for it before sleeping if you don't give it to him you won't know what inner peace is so I made it and took it to her room then hugged them good night. There was no one in the lounge so I went to make Imi tea and took everything to our room. She was on the bed busy with diaper gravy, I placed their bottles and flusk next to the tin of milk on her bedside .

Her : "Thank you"

Me : "No problem, need help here?"

Her : "No it's okay you can go shower"

Me : "I made you tea too"

Her : *smiles* "Thank you Kani"

I went to go shower and when I came back to bed she was tucking them in their cots so I moved around quietly. By the time I was done she had just slipped into bed so I switched off the lights, leaving our lamps on and joined her. She turned and gave me her back

"babe?" I called out for her

"Mh?" I sighed then cuddled myself up behind her and she let me

Me : "I'm sorry about everything, I've been a selfish prick no other way to explain my behavior and I won't make excuses for it either. But I'm sorry that you had to suffer because of me, I want to fix things and I will, even if it means visiting the shrink" she turned to lay on her back then faced me.

Her : "Don't lie to me Kumkani"

Me : "I'm not Maraaah, I promise you *sigh* I want you to trust me as a husband and a father, if it means going to a shrink will get us a step closer to us being together happily then I'll do that"

Her : "what about Natasha?"

Me : *sigh* "Natasha and I have been through a lot together yes, she is an a amazing person but I think it would be best if she and I went our separate ways and started afresh. We aren't good for each other. You bring out the best in me, love shouldn't be forced and with Tash it feels like we're forcing things. I don't want that, I want us all to be happy. She'll be way happier without me and I want you, I honestly love you" she sat up straight and looked at me "I know I haven't been showing it but I'll prove myself, with Natasha it was just a lot of unresolved feelings. We both needed closure, I feel we got that now. Yes she's going to be hurt but she'll

realize it is for the best too"

Her : "And you not just saying this..."

Me : "I mean every word baby"

Her : *sighs* "Zweli you hurt me"

Me : "I know but let me fix this please Marahah" I

sat up straight and pulled her to sit on me

"please baby, I've learnt my lesson and I'm sorry.

I really am"

Her : "It won't be easy"

Me : "I know but I'll work for it" I locked both hands into mine, brought them to my face and kissed them "please?"

Her : "you sound genuine right now yes, as much as I'd like to believe that you mean it. I want actions Zweli"

Me : *nods* "and you'll see them"

Her : "Okay, can we sleep now? I'm tired"

Me : "sure, me too" I flipped us over

Her : "Zwe!"

Me : *chuckles* "sorry" I kissed her cheek, we were now laying on the bed facing each other "just didn't want you breaking the connection"

Her : "yeah right!" She pulled my ear

Me : "ouch!!"

Her : *smiles* "good night Imaad" she closed her eyes

Me : "good night my queen" I pecked her nose then forehead "I love you" she simply squeezed my hand and I brought her closer to my body, with her head on my chest and one arm across my stomach I fell into a deep slumber.

Sunday morning came and I woke up to an empty room, I went to go take a leak in the bathroom and splashed water on my face after brushing my teeth. I went back to the room,

slipped on my push ins and walked out the room. Babalwa and my mother were at church that I knew so I didn't worry about walking around shirtless. I could hear voices coming from the lounge and Imaraah was there feeding the girls while she monitored Junior as he ate his porridge.

Me : "Good morning" I said as I as on the capert next to Junior, Maraah was sitting across me smiling

Her : "Salaam Kumkani, how are you?" She carried on feeding the kids

Me : "I'm doing good baby how are you?"

Her : "I'm well my husband" that right there made me smile

Me : "It's good to hear that, need a hand?"

Her : "A.ah I'll manage here, we are almost done. Just watch Junior make sure he doesn't make a mess, your mom will kill me for her carpets"

Me : *chuckles* "yeah she will" I looked at Junior who was eating just fine concentrating on the cartoons playing on TV

"what would you like for breakfast?" Imaraah asked as she stood up

Me : "can I have a cup of coffee? Don't worry about breakfast"

Her : "But you haven't eaten..."

Me : "Babe, you're not my maid so please just..."

Her : "I love taking care of you and besides I have nothing else to do but to take care of the kids and you, sometimes Babi & ma but I don't mind"

Me : "And thank you for that baby but it won't be for long" I laid on the kids blanket that they were on and played with them

Her : "What does that mean?"

Me : "we are going to move out soon, I'm still

looking for a place for us to live though then break the news to my mom. We need our own space, the girls are old enough now so you don't need help from my mom" she squealed and jumped on top of me

Her : "Thank you baby" she kissed my cheek

Me : "Was it that bad living here?"

Her : "No I just really wanna have our own space, the bedroom arrangement isn't working anymore. We barely have space in there with the kids, your stuff and mine combined it's just too much"

Me : "I didn't realize love you should have said something"

Her : "I didn't want it to sound as if I was trying to separate you from your mom & sister" she stood up "let me go get you a cup of coffee" she walked away to the kitchen

"Tata"

"Mh?" I looked at him

Him : "nqibile" (I'm done)

Me : "Good boy, hambo nika aunt Imi isitya. Ubuye hlale notatakho" (go give the plate to aunt Imi then come back and sit with your dad)

Him : "sdlale game?" (We gonna play a game)

Me : "my phone is flat nje boy"

Him : "okay" he picked up Imi's phone from the couch "sodlala ki phone yam" (we'll play on my phone)

Me : *chuckles* "okay, go put the plate in the kitchen"

He got up and ran to the kitchen, I looked at the girls. They were starting to look more and more like me, that's when I realized that I had to make sure they never have to go through what I put Natasha through and I really need to change.

Insert 32

△

NATASHA

•

Zweli left me conflicted last night, I mean yes I was struggling with making a decision of whether I'd say yes to him or not but for him to sound like he was rethinking the whole thing really had me fucked up with mixed emotions. I don't know anymore, this whole thing is just draining emotionally!

I had the ring he gave me on my finger, busy twisting and turning it. It was beautiful, I should be happy now that I have it but I'm not! Instead I'm doubting us, his love for me. Oh God please just show me the way please! My phone rang, I reached to get it from my bedside. It was him.

"Zwe"

Him : "Morning, I didn't wake you did I?"

Me : *sighs* "no you didn't"

Him : "Are you okay?"

Me : "no I'm not, I was thinking about us"

Him : "that's actually why I'm calling, can we meet up for lunch or something?"

Me : "I don't know Zweli..."

Him : "Please we need to talk" I swallowed

Me : "Okay"

Him : "Thank you, around 2? I'll send you the location"

Me : "okay" I sighed

Him : "Okay, I have to get going. See you in the afternoon"

Me : "bye Zwe"

Him : *clears throat* "Bye"

He hung up and I removed the phone from my ear, only to blankly stare at the screen. My heart

wasn't at peace, in fact it was beating at a high pace. I was scared, nervous. I know I lost Zwe the day he married Iminam, but I've been in denial hoping that he would leave her and that we would have a chance again, that's why I stuck around all this time as much as it hurt me each and everytime I had hope. Hope that he would choose me, but right now I don't know where I stand and it hurts so badly. My phone beeped and it was him, sending me the location. I placed my phone back on my bedside, it was still morning. My off day, so I slept again.

When I woke up from my power nap it was around twelve so I got out of bed and opened my blinds along with the windows then made my bed before going to take a long bath to destress. I didn't bother dressing up, I wore a pair of black sweatpants with a black tshirt along with my furr slides. My hair was combed up in a bun, I wore my watch and went

downstairs. I was home alone, my parents were out well dad had a case in Jhb so mom left with him. I went to the kitchen and had cereal even though it was afternoon already then grabbed a bottle of water before leaving.

Arriving at the coffee shop, I parked my car and texted him that I had just drove in. He told me he was already inside so I should join him. I checked myself in the mirror and applied labello, grabbed my bag and shades then made my way inside, he was sitting in the far corner busy on his phone. I approached the table he was sitting by and he looked up when I was closeby, stood up to hug me then sat down after opening the chair for me.

Me : "Thank you" I took off the shades, he sat down

Him : *nods* "I ordered some juice for us is that chilled?"

Me : "Yeah sure, you wanted us to talk?"

Him : "Yes I did" the waiter came with our order and left, I placed the straw into my glass. As I was about to take a sip "you're wearing your ring" I looked at my hand

Me : "Yes" I removed my hand from the table to my thigh "am I not supposed to?"

Him : "That's not what I'm saying"

Me : "then what are you saying Zweli?" I was starting to get hostile

Him : "Tash can you calm down please?" I breathed out "Thank you"

Me : "I'm sorry"

Him : "No I'm sorry" he sighed

Me : "What for?"

Him : "Breaking your heart, giving you false hope, wasting your time..."

Me : "I don't understand" he looked aside then down on his drink as he swirled the straw in his glass before looking up at me again

Him : "I've decided to let go of the whole polygamy thing" I swallowed hard "I realized that this whole thing has been hurting the two of you, more especially you and I can't keep doing that. I can't keep hurting you, you deserve more"

Me : "Zwelibanzi you are being vivid"

Him : "I've decided to let you go, we aren't good for each other. Well more like I'm not good for you" my eyes started getting glassy and I bit my lip trying to hold back the tears

"You are breaking up with me?" I said that with my voice breaking in between I was already getting emotional

Him : *sighs* "Tash please I'm doing this for you so you can be happy" I blinked and the tears

fell

Me : "without you?" I wiped my wet cheeks
"Zweli you know I love you yet you keep hurting me each and every time you do this to me. What is it that I'm doing wrong? Tell me Zwe, what is it that she's doing right which I'm clearly not doing since I'm always on the receiving end"

Him : "Tash please don't make any harder than it already is, I want you to be happy!"

Me : "how am I supposed to do that without you Zweli? Ndenzeni kuwe?" (What did I do to you?)

Him : "Natasha, I'm not good for you"

Me : "that's bullshit dammit!" I banged on the table

Him : "You see that right there, I can't deal with that. Natasha you and I together are toxic, yes our bond is strong but our flaws aren't a good mix. We are toxic to each other"

Me : "okay I'm sorry it's just that..."

Him : "no Tash stop, I have my own issues to deal with and I suggest you do the same. You have bottled up anger inside you, it's like you're ticking time bomb"

Me : "I didn't mean to shout baby please" he brushed his face with his hands as a sign of frustration "Zwe..." I said softly, he looked up at me and his eyes were bloodshot red

Him : "stop, just stop. I love you yes but I love you enough to let you go cause I cannot make you happy, I'm weak when it comes to you so please just stop and let me do this"

Me : "Zwelibanzi I love you! I'll go to a counsellor or something, I promise you. You hurt me yes, we need to work on this, I can't let you go Zweli. I refuse" he starred at me and didn't say a word.

•

•

LIFA MOHALE

△

The day out with Babalwa was amazing, each and every time I spend time with her she just makes me fall in love with her even more. Even after what happened to her she's still an amazing person with so much love to give, yes I know about what her father did. The man was well known and the case was in the news a couple of times, when I saw her on campus I could see she was familiar I just couldn't remember where I knew her face from until further on in our friendship but I didn't want to bring it up. I don't want her to think I have ulterior motives when I don't, she'll tell me when she is ready and trusts me fully.

I was on my way home from work and boy was I tired! I worked as a waiter at some fancy restaurant in Sea Point, so I sometimes bring food for Bandile when there's some leftovers

from lunch as we are provided with lunch. I walked into the yard and knocked at the house, Sis Busi opened

Her : "Oh Lifa it's you" she looked back "Andile, your brother is here!" She looked back at me "come in please, I was about to dish up"

Me : "no thank you, I just wanna wash the little guy and sleep"

Her : "I understand, must be tired from being on your feet the whole..."

"Bhuti!" He burst through and jumped on me, I picked him up as tired as I was

Me : "Ou sani" I looked at Sis Busi "Thank you, I'll give you the money end of this month along with the rent"

Her : *nods* "Okay"

Me : "Good night" she closed the door and I put Andile down "you had a good day with Sonke?"

Him : *nods* "and we went to church with Busi then saya emall and she bought us ice cream" we walked to the back of the house, we lived in a bungalow

Me : "I'm sure you enjoyed that, I know how much you love ice cream" he nodded with a huge smile plastered on his face, I opened the door for us and he got in so did I.

I closed the windows and curtains then switched on the lights, Bandile was sitting on our one sitter couch watching TV.

Me : "I brought you food from work" I said plating up for him

Him : "nawe uzotyia?" (You also going to eat)

Me : "I'll eat the bread from yesterday, this one is for you to enjoy" I gave him the chicken along with some finger food and sandwiches

Him : "enkosi bhuti" (thank you) he ate while watching tv and I sat on the camping chair

watching him.

As long as he was fed and happy then I'm good, it is all I want for him to have a better life than I did because I never had it is especially after my parents died and I had to look after him. I went to bed hungry so he could eat, he will never suffer for as long as I live ever!

"Bhuti, ndihluthi" (I'm full) I looked at his plate and there was still some left

Me : "Okay, you'll take that to school tomorrow"

Him : *smiles* "ewe"

He stood up and got his lunch box from the cupboard then put his leftovers in there before placing it in our tiny fridge. I poured him juice and fixed myself a peanut butter sandwich with some tea, my phone rang as I sat down about to enjoy my food. I looked at the caller ID, sigh "Mafa" I answered

Him : "I just sent you money for rent and for Bandile's school fees"

Me : "when are you coming?"

Him : "Lifa mfethu, you know my life is this side. I can't leave my kid here"

Me : "We both know that's not what is keeping you apho" (there)

Him : "I'm not getting into this again, you chose your way and I chose mine. Stop judging the way I live"

Me : "Even when it puts me in danger!?"

Him : "fuck man don't yell, just take care of our little brother and finish your studies"

Me : "Nigga you should be here doing that too"

Him : "I'm not clever like you Lifa, I am good at what I do"

Me : "And when you get caught? Mafa stop being selfish I need you bru, they could shoot

me here thinking it's you"

Him : "that won't happened"

Me : "wake up! This is the real world, you will get caught! In fact stop sending me blood money!"

Him : "Don't forget I'm older then you Lifa" I clicked my tongue

Me : "by 5 minutes!"

Him : "just give Bandile the damn phone and stop talking shit to me" I handed the phone to Andile and ate my food.

After eating I put the kettle on and washed the dishes from last night along with today's dishes, washing dishes is not something I enjoy doing. I try by all costs to avoid until it's start pilling up then I wash them, when I finished with the dishes Bandile was still on the phone.

"Say bye you need to wash and sleep" I said to

Bandile then went outside to the bathroom and got the small tub we wash in filled it with some water and brought it inside, he was already undressing.

He washed quickly and I cleaned up after him, as soon as he got into bed he slept. I washed too then got into bed, I remembered I haven't been on my phone since morning. I had 2 messages from Babalwa and a missed call then the bank notification from my twin brother, I decided to text Babalwa. I didn't have enough airtime to call her.

`hey baby, so sorry I was out of reach today. Work was hectic today` sent

`oh hi, I missed you` she replied `well I still do, can't wait to see you tomorrow` another one.

I smiled before replying again.

`I miss you even more my queen, how was your day?` I was starting to get drowsy the tiredness

was kicking in

`it was just a Sunday, did some studying but all I can think of is our date yesterday. I loved it` she replied

`I'm glad you did, we are going to have more of those don't worry beautiful` sent `baby I'm really tired, I'll see you tomorrow okay? Good night` she read them but didn't reply `babe?`

`good night` she finally replied

`I love you` sent. I knew she wasn't going to reply to that but I sent it anyway then slept.

Insert 33 [SHORT]

Δ

ZWELIBANZI

•

I can't deal with the fact that I am breaking her heart again, after everything we have been through. Even though I didn't ask she was there

for me, still gives me unconditional love even when I treat her like trash but she deserves more and I can't give her that. One day she'll realize I was doing this for her not me, ending things between us is all for her to finally be happy because I'm failing to do that.

After the little argument with her I decided to leave, it was pointless staying there trying to be civil because we kept on bickering with each other but one thing I took from that meeting I had with her was that I was tired and I wanted was peace. I don't need a woman right now, I've been through some fucked up shit and I just need time out, therefore I think it's best I let both woman go. I don't know what I want, it's evident to me but until then I need to let these two woman live their lives without growing any hatred towards me because I'm hurting them, I can't have that I have kids to think of and this situation isn't healthy for me or them therefore

I'm walking away from it.

When I arrived at the house the kids were taking a nap and Iminam was busy with Babalwa

"Hi" I said as I entered the lounge area, they greeted right back "ma can I talk to you?"

Her : "Okay boy"

Me : "In private please"

"Ummmh Babalwa let's go to the kitchen"

Iminam said as she stood up, I looked at her

Me : "Don't" I looked at ma "can we go to your room or outside?" She looked at me concerned

Her : "of course baby" she stood up and took my hand "let's go"

We walked out of the house and went to the backyard by the pool

Her : "What's wrong mntanam?" She sat down on the chair I sat next to her

Me : *sighs* "everything mama, I can't take it anymore"

Her : "Talk to me"

Me : "I've made some choices over the past few months that were rushed, I was in a bad space but now I'm trying to recollect myself and live a life that will make me happy because I'm not happy ma"

Her : "is it the marriage?" I nodded "oh baby *sighs* I knew you weren't ready for it but you are old enough to make your own choices so I let you do what you wanted even this converting thing which I never understood but if you aren't happy mntanam then talk to her. This isn't something you can hide"

Me : "That's the thing mama she isn't doing anything wrong, I'm the problem. I'm just not happy with my life at the moment, I'm not at peace with the way things are and I just want to

be alone"

Her : "Are you sure about this Kumkani?"

Me : "Yes ma"

Her : "You are going to break that girl's heart"

Me : *sigh* "I'll be breaking it even more if I keep giving her my empty self" she nodded

Her : "So what do you want to do?"

Me : "We are going to move out, I'll get her a place to stay with the girls anything she needs I'll provide but I'm not staying in the marriage"

Her : "boy are you sure?"

Me : "positive"

Her : *sighs* "oh kodwa Zweli I wish you hadn't rushed into this, the poor girl will be shattered and you converted for nothing" I shook my head

Me : "me converting had nothing to do with her and everything to do with myself ma, I never

considered myself a Christian but islam is something I always felt strongly about I just never knew how to go about taking the step of becoming a Muslim but now I am and I'm happy with that decision"

Her : "okay keh boy as long as you understand the consequence of what you are doing"

Me : "I do mama"

Her : *sigh* "let's go inside"

Me : "You go, I'll stay out here for a while"

Her : "And supper?"

Me : "I'm not hungry ma, I just need some space right now" she nodded again before walking away

I know what I'm doing, I can't justify my feelings for them so I'll rather leave both of them to live their lives cause I'm messed up at the moment. I just need to focus on taking care of my kids,

get my law degree and fucken make a success of myself without dragging anybody down because I don't know what the fuck that I want!

Insert 34

△

BABALWA

•

The year was slowly coming to an end, what a rollercoaster ride it has been! But the important thing was I am happy and healing . The dynamics at home had changed a bit, now it was only mom and I. Bhuti moved out with his family, well not really with them cause he separated with Iminam which came as a shocker to me honestly and what shocked me more was the fact that he broke up with her to be single!? I mean you guys know my brother, I thought it was all for Natasha but I was wrong. He currently lives in his own bachelor pad while

Iminam lives with the twins in a comfortable home with three bedrooms paid for by him. I don't know but I ask myself why Natasha never got all that but again it's non of my business I'm just a "kid" right?

At the moment I can honestly say that I am happy, truly am. Things between Lifa and I are amazing, I feel myself developing strong feelings for him. Wanting to be around him all the time, wanting to hear from him each and every second when we are away from each other, he just makes me so happy. You know my therapist Ashley told me he shouldn't be my only source of happiness. That I should be happy with me first and love myself before I go out to external sources and I've done all that, yes I'm still healing but I can now look in the mirror and be totally satisfied with what staring back at me and not judge myself because of my past experiences. I love the road I'm on honestly.

"Baby you know I'm going to the church conference today and I'm coming back on Friday" I nodded with food in my mouth while I browsed through my notes. I was writing my last paper today "I don't think you're going to be okay here by yourself so please go to your brother's house or I'll ask him to come here" I looked at her as she sipped her tea

Me : "mama I'm fine, I'm not a baby you know"

Her : "Vuyelwa this house is too big for me to leave you on your own, or you can come with me to the church conference"

Me : "What? Noo" I stood up with my bowl "I'm writing my last paper today and I just want to relax mama please"

Her : "The church conference will do you good baby"

Me : "I don't want to go ma" I placed my bowl in the sink

Her : "Okay fine, but you are going to your brother's house"

I didn't say anything I just went to sit back down and browse through my notes

"you should go pack, you can do this in the car"

Me : "Mama please"

Her : "Okay" I stood up with my notes and went to go sit in the lounge so I could revise in peace!
"We are going to leave in 5 minutes!"

Me : "Yes ma"

I briefly went through my notes then went to go put everything in my room. Took my cellphone, student card, 2 pens and a pencil. I placed everything in my small handbag then went out of my room, mama was coming out of hers too busy looking through her purse

"Baby you know I can't find my car keys, I can swear I put them in here when I got home

yesterday" she said still busy

Me : "They're in the cupholder in the lounge, you left them there"

Her : "And my cellph..."

Me : "same place, I'll wait for you outside"

Her : "Okay"

I walked out while she rushed around, when she finally came out we went off. All roads led to campus then she would go run her own errands.

"I'll send you some money in case you need anything"

Me : "You don't have to mama, Zweli sends me an allowance every month"

Her : "Is it still enough?"

Me : "Yes ma"

Her : "Okay well if you need anything just send me a message okay baby?" She parked in front

of the student gate, I nodded while I unstrapped my safety belt then took my bag from my feet "ubhale kakuhle mntanam" (write well my baby)

Me : "enkosi mama" (thank you ma) I kissed her cheek "enjoy your conference" we hugged

Her : "behave endlini kwa Zweli" (at Zweli's house) I opened the door

Me : *chuckles* "when have I ever misbehaved"

Her : "Just behave Babalwa"

Me : "Don't worry, I will" I got off the car "love you"

Her : "I love you too baby, bye"

Me : "Bye ma" I closed the door.

As I walked into campus I heard a voice callout my name, I turned back and it was Lifa. I smiled as he walked towards me.

"Hey you" he said as he hooked his arm on my shoulder to bring me into a side hang and a

quick peck on the forehead

Me : "Hi" I wrapped my arm across his waist and we walked like that

Him : "so are you ready for our last paper?"

Me : "Just wanna get done, tired of the late nights"

Him : "Tell me about it, I'm exhausted plus having to work on weekends. I'm just glad this is our last hope non of us has to write a supplementary"

Me : *chuckles* "That will just be a slap on the face"

Him : "Anyway baby remember you told Bandile you'd see him soon?" I nodded "Well he keeps asking when that soon will be"

Me : "Omg I totally forgot"

Him : "It's okay, you can come home with me today then you can finally put me out of my

'when is Babalwa coming' misery"

Me : "it can't have been that bad"

Him : *chuckles* "I'm serious okay" I looked at him and shook my head "let's sit over there" he pointed at an empty bench next to our writing hall.

When we sat down he took out his book then a lunchbox with grapes and handed them to me

Me : *smiles* "Thank you"

Him : "You're welcome"

Me : "We will eat them together right?" He shook his head

Him : "No baby I..."

Me : "Yes you will Lifa I'm not going to eat alone"

Him : "Okay"

I took out my phone and looked through slides

as I ate the grapes while he studied from his book and did the same. After a while we had to go into the writing centre, got there and wrote. Let me just say I never want to see that paper ever in my life again ! That's how I will describe it.

"How was it?" He asked as he came out, I finished first and went to wait outside for him. I just shook my head and he laughed "it can't have been that bad angel" he took my hand and we began walking

Me : "I don't want to talk about it"

Him : "Okay I'm sorry"

Me : "Where are we going?"

Him : "Bandile"

Me : "Can I go buy something for him first?
Don't want to arrive empty handed"

Him : "No you don't have to Babalwa"

Me : "Please" I stopped walking, he sighed

Him : "Fine"

We went to the student centre and I bought some stuff for us which he put in his backpack together with my handbag because we were going to use the train and according to him it wasn't safe. I wasn't about to argue. When we arrived in Khayelitsha which I might add was my very first time there I didn't leave his side. We went straight to where he lives, which was a bungalow he rented.

"It's nothing fancy, not what you're used to but it's all I could afford" he said as he unlocked the door

Me : "It's okay" he nodded and opened the door

Him : "Welcome to my home"

I got in and tried not to look around but I couldn't help myself and it wasn't bad or shabby. Everything was in place with a bed in the far

corner, wardrobe right next to it then some open space and a tiny table which had the TV-set and a one sitter couch. By the door was the cupboard with the two plate stove ontop of it, tiny sink and a cute little fridge right next to it.

"Well this is cute" I finally said with a smile on my face as I walked to the couch

Him : *clears throat* "it's not much but..."

Me : *smiling* "stop doing that, I'm not a snob"
he breathed out

Him : "I know you're not baby, I just..."

Me : "Where's the little guy?" He checked his wrist watch

Him : "Well it's only around 11, his transport should be here around 2" I nodded and reached for the remote, switched the TV on and surfed through the channels. "I'll go buy us some coldrink"

Me : *nods* "Okay"

Him : "you gonna be fine here alone? Or you gonna come with me?"

Me : "I'll stay" he walked towards me and crouched down in front of me

Him : *smiles* "Thank you"

Me : "What for?"

Him : "for being amazing"

Me : *giggles* "you always say that"

Him : "Cause it's true" he held my hands and kissed them "and I'll never stop saying that no matter what, my feelings for you will stay the same if not grow stronger" he moved closer to me "can I kiss you please?" I bit my bottom lip

Me : "I don't know, I..." I didn't even get to finish what I was babbling on about because he attacked my lips which made me freeze. I didn't know what to do, I've never kissed a guy before

hell he is the first guy to ever get this close to me. He stopped and looked at me

Him : "I'm sorry baby, I just... I'm sorry okay?"

Me : "I've never been kissed before"

Him : "I know"

Me : "You know?" He nodded "Oh I didn't realize it was evident"

Him : "It's nothing to be ashamed of, I just..." He sighed "You know how strongly I feel about you right? I'd never hurt you, at least not deliberately" I nodded "I'll wait until you are ready" I'm ready! I'm ready right now! I want to kiss you too I just don't know how! What if I embarrass myself? "baby?"

Me : "Mh?"

Him : "I'm sorry, I didn't mean to make you uncomfortable. It won't happened again, I'll control myself from the urge to have your

tender lips against lips... All I'm saying is I'll control myself"

Me : *swallows* "I... I want you to" he looked at me quizzically

Him : "Want me to what?" I looked at my hands which were tightly held by his

Me : "to kiss me"

Him : "look at me" I did "I'm not pressuring you into anything please don't feel rushed I..."

Me : "Please Lifa" he slowly licked his lips while looking me in the eye then lowering his eyes to my lips then back up to my eyes again

Him : "You sure?" I nodded

Me : "Yes" he swallowed

Him : "Okay, stop me if you not comfortable with anything" I nodded, he breathed out.

Suddenly he seemed nervous

Me : "You don't have to if you don't want to"

Him : "What? Nooo baby, I just want... Never mind" he cupped my face and brought it closer to his.

His touch made me close my eyes, he brushed his lips over mine then placed a soft peck on them and I felt him move them a little before I felt his lips against mine again and he took my bottom lip into his slowly sucking on it and did the same to my top lip

"just follow my lead" he said in between this and I did too slowly to make sure I didn't mess up and before I knew it, it came naturally and it brought about foreign feelings inside me then he stopped to look at me "you okay?" I slowly nodded and he smiled "I'll go get that coldrink" I nodded again before he placed a soft peck on my lips again and stood up.

As soon as he walked out I placed my fingers on my lips, I couldn't believe I just had his lips against mine! And it felt that good! I started

smiling like a retard to myself, I think I want to do it again I mean it felt good, it felt right! I didn't want to stop but he did, why did he? Maybe he didn't like the way I was kissing him? Or maybe I just wasn't doing it the way he expected me to.

I want to go home, right now! I've embarrassed myself! I looked for his backpack and it was on the bed, I opened it and took my bag out. His phone rang while I was busy, it was written Mafa. I didn't know if I should answer or not so I decided not to. Not while I was crying, no! I took my phone out of my bag, I was going to call an uber and leave before he comes back.

"What are you doing?" I shut my eyes still looking down at my phone. I heard the door shut then I looked up "Babe?" He put the coldrink and vetkoeks he had bought on the cupboard and rushed towards me "Why are you crying?"

Me : "I just wanna go home" he enveloped me into his arms

Him : "What's wrong? Talk to me" he pulled put out of the hug and wiped my wet cheeks "Mh?"

Me : "You didn't enjoy the kiss?"

Him : "What?" He looked at me confused

Me : "The kiss! You didn't enjoy it, that's why you stopped and went off to the shop because.."

Him : "whoah! Yima" (wait) "are you kidding me right now? Do you know how long I waited for that kiss to happened? Of course I enjoyed it, I enjoyed every minute of it baby"

Me : "Then why did you stop?"

Him : "You didn't want me to stop?" I shook my head and he smiled "you should have said so 'Lifa don't stop" he mimicked my voice and I giggled "I'm sorry I stopped" he pecked my lips "I didn't want to but I had to for certain reasons

which I won't get into but trust me when I say you're a great kisser and I want to do it again"

Me : *smiles* "me too"

Him : *smirks* "really?" I nodded "I thought you'd be shy but no, not at all and I like that. Next time please be open with me okay?" I nodded and he cupped my face before planting yet another kiss on my lips then pulled out "now I'm not stopping cause I didn't enjoy that I'm stopping because I'm hungry"

Me : *giggles* "Okay, I see you bought my favourite"

Him : "Always, have a sit" he pecked my lips and opened a camp chair next to the couch I was sitting on before serving me a vetkoek with a cold glass of coke

Me : "Thank you" he sat down next to me

Him : "Anytime baby"

We ate while watching tv, then chilled while conversing back and forth before the door burst open and a boy ran inside wearing his school uniform screaming "bhuti". It was Bandile, Lifa introduced us before instructing him to take off his uniform then gave him his vetkoek and some drink. He kept on talking though, he wouldn't stop but one thing a person could pick up was how much this little boy loved his older brother. Everything was bhuti this, bhuti that, and then bhuti did this it was just admirable but his brother was jealous he instructed him to go play outside.

"Sorry about that, he doesn't stop"

Me : *smiles* "I was enjoying his company, you know"

Him : "Of course, you couldn't stop laughing. You don't even laugh that much when I tell you my jokes" he pretended to sulk

Me : *giggles* "you can't seriously be jealous of an 8 year old" he folded his arms across his chest "okay okay I'm sorry, I'm all yours now" I pecked his cheek and he smiled "so?" He shook his head "baaabe!" He looked at me with a huge smile plastered on his face

Him : "Did you just call me babe!?" I nodded slowly he stood up and picked me up before swinging me around then put me down "can we just make this official? Please be my girlfriend, I know this isn't the most ideal way to..."

Me : "I thought I was already your girlfriend" he looked at me in excitement

Him : "What!?" I nodded "no say it so I believe it"

Me : "I'll be your girlfriend Lifa"

Him : *smiles* "And I'll be your boyfriend!?" I nodded, he hugged me tightly "you've just made me sooo happy" he looked at me "Thank you so much for giving me a chance" he pecked my

lips "I love you so much, you won't regret this"

Me : "I love you too"

Him : "Fuck! I just wanna scream that's how happy I am" he kissed me unexpectedly like he was so happy it made me happy too "I won't hurt you, I love you too much to hurt you"

Me : "I hope so"

Him : "Let's sit down" we sat on the bed "I have a twin brother who stays back home, he is a troublemaker but yeah we are family. His name is Mafa, he is the oldest. We are only 3 boys, no girls. My mother was a Sotho woman, MmaThabo which is Bandile's Sotho name, Thabo that is and my father was a Xhosa man, Thozamile. They never got married but were together until their last day. They both died in a car crash, Bandile was only 3 years old at the time" he sighed "we been living on our own since, family members helped here and there. I

don't have any other name just Lifa Mohale, it's a Xhosa name which I got from my father many mistake it for the Sotho one being Lefa with an 'e' but yeah that's about it. I fend for my brother and I"

Me : "Wow, I'm sorry about your parents. What you're doing for Bandile is amazing, reminds me of my brother"

Him : "Oh?"

Me : "Yeah, he... He has done a lot for me" I cleared my throat "Lifa I... I was.." My phone rang, it was Zweli. "Bhuti?"

Him : "nyuti? Where the hell are you Babalwa I've been waiting for you at the house! Where are you!?"

Me : "Ummm bhuti, I'm sorry I lost track of time"

Him : "Where are you so I can fetch you Babalwa?" I swallowed and looked at Lifa then at my wrist watch it was around to 7

Me : "I'll uber home bhuti ndiyeza"

Him : "Babalwa uphi!?"

Me : "I'm coming" I quickly hung "my brother is waiting for me at home"

Lifa : "Shit baby!"

Me : "I'll uber home, I'll just say I went out with Fanisa"

Him : "okay, let me go get Bandile while you order an uber"

He rushed outside.

Insert 35

Δ

BABALWA

•

As I waited for the uber to come I sent Zweli a message telling him I had gone out with Fanisa and lost track of time but I would be home soon,

just so he could stop stressing. I placed all my stuff in my bag and Lifa came back inside with Bandile.

"Sisi uyahamba?" Bandile asked as soon as he saw my bag next to me

Me : *nods* "but I'll come see you again vah?"

Him : "Nini?" (When)

Me : "Soon"

Him : "Ha.a wena sisi xawusithi soon uza after a long time" (when you say soon you come after a long time)

Me : *smiles* "not this time around nyan nyan" he held out his pinky and I hooked mine around his "I promise"

"Are you gonna be okay baby?" Lifa asked and I nodded "Are you sure? I don't want you getting in trouble because of me, last thing I want is to be on your brother's bad side"

Me : "He won't know, relax"

Him : "How can I relax when..."

Me : "Baby it's fine really" he smiled

Him : "Fine"

We sat down and he started fixing up supper which was amusing to me but cute at the same, he asked me to lend a helping hand and I helped where necessary but soon had to leave because my uber was outside.

"I'm gonna miss you" he said as he handed me a damp cloth to wipe my hands

Me : "I'm going to miss you too" I placed the cloth on the sink and hugged him

Him : "You going to visit again right?" I nodded with my head still on his chest "Okay baby, go before your brother blows a gasket"

Me : *giggles* "Okay" I looked up to face him "I had a great day today"

Him : "Me too beautiful, I'm so happy you came"
he kissed my forehead "say bye to Bandile"

I had forgotten about him, he was so intune with the cartoons that were playing he went completely mute. I crouched down on in front of him and hugged him goodbye before telling him to get his stuff from Lifa that I had bought him earlier.

"Masambe babe" he opened the door and walked out, I looked at Bandile

Me : "Sharp neh"

Him : "you going to come back again don't forget"

Me : *giggles* "I won't forget"

I stood up and walked out, Lifa was waiting outside with my bag. He pulled me after closing the door then stole a quick kiss only then did he walk me out the gate. He even took down the number plate because apparently you

can never be too cautious. After bidding farewell the uber drove me straight home, I paid the driver then got off in front of the gate. Zweli's car was parked on the driveway and the lights were on, I checked the time and it was just a few minutes past 8.

I quickly said a silent prayer before going inside the house, the Tv wasn't on. That made me more anxious, as I passed the kitchen I caught a glimpse of him sitting on the high chair busy on his phone which he put down when he saw me. I didn't even know if I should greet or not, that's how intimidating he was right now

"Uvelaphi?" (Where are you coming from) he finally said, I swallowed.

Me : "I was with Fanisa, she's going to Joburg tomorrow so we decided to hang out before she leaves"

Him : "Hang out where?" Where Babalwa!?

Me : "Uhh bhuti?"

Him : "You heard me perfectly Babalwa, beniphi?" (Where were you two)

Me : "We went to Khayelitsha"

Him : "Kha... What!? Babalwa are you insane!? Do you know how dangerous that place is? What if something happened to you dammit? Uxelele bani ba uyaphi, huh?" (Who did you tell about your whereabouts)

Me : "No one" he chuckled

Him : "Yaz ubokhe ube considerate of other people, I'm in here worried sick about you not knowing uphi Babalwa since when do you come back after the sun goes down? Sundiqhela Babalwa, go pack your shit sihambe!"

Me : "I'm ..."

Him : "I don't want to hear it!"

I swallowed the lump that was in my throat and

walked to my room, as soon as I got inside tears rushed down my cheeks. I hate making him angry, it hurts me. My phone rang and I quickly wiped my tears to check who it was, Lifa. I declined the call and threw my phone on the bed before grabbing my bag and packing my stuff when I was done, I walked out.

"I'm done" I said as I made my way towards him, he looked at me

Him : "Switch off the lights" he walked towards me and took my bag

I went around the house switching off the lights before going back to him, we walked out and he switched the alarm on. We quickly made our way to the car and he drove off, the silence and tension were too much! I was even scared to move or use my phone, so I looked out the window most of our journey

"what do you want for supper?" He asked as he

drove into the mall parking

Me : "Anything is fine" he nodded

Him : "I'll be back"

He climbed out and left me in the car, I quickly reached for my bag and took out my phone. I had a handful of missed calls from Lifa and 1 message.

`Angel? Is everything okay? I'm getting worried now, kudala umkile(you left a long time ago) so you should be home by now so I don't understand why you aren't answering my calls. Please get back to me, I just want to know that you're home safe please`

I decided to call him back, the phone didn't even get to ring because he answered on the first ring

"Finally! Why did you scare me like that? Are you home safe?"

Me : "I'm sorry, yes I got home safe"

Him : "Whats wrong? You don't sound okay"

Me : "Just that my brother gave me an earful for coming home late"

Him : "I'm sorry baby, I lost track of time. It won't happen again, next time we will even set an alarm"

Me : *sighs* "Okay"

Him : "Baby askies kaloku, just apologize to him and he'll be fine"

Me : "He won't give me a chance"

Him : "I'm sure he has cooled off now"

Me : "I'll do it when he comes back, we're at the mall. Well he went inside, I'm in the car"

Him : "Good girl, I miss you. The house seems empty now without my GIRLFRIEND" He emphasized girlfriend

Me : *giggles* "I miss you too boyfriend"

Him : "feels so good knowing you're officially my girl, you've made me so happy"

Me : "Only because you keep me overjoyed"

"Bhuti jonga!" I heard Bandile's loud voice in the background

Lifa : "Ja yima, I'm busy"

"No now!!" He called out again

Him : "Eish baby, we will talk later okay?"

Me : "Okay"

Him : "I love you"

Me : *smiles* "I love you too" he hung up

It felt so good saying that, I had been holding back this whole time but now I could finally be honest about how I truly felt about him and the truth was I had fallen deeply for him. I can't stop myself, he just makes me want to love him

more & more each day and it's the little things he does.

I saw Zweli approaching the car and I composed the excitement that had built up inside me after that call with my boyfriend
yes my boyfriend . He came in the car and handed me the takeout before starting the car ignition. I cleared my throat and he looked at me, he had calmed down.

Me : "I'm sorry for going out without notifying anyone, it was selfish of me. I didn't think and I apologize for coming home late, having you wait for me and have your plans derailed because you didn't know where I was or if I was okay. I didn't mean to worry you bhuti ndicela uxolo" (please forgive me)

Him : *sigh* "it's okay, I'm sorry for raising my voice at you too. Just that I was worried sick about you, you know I get overly protective when it comes to you"

Me : "And thank you for that"

Him : "Great let's go"

He buckled up and drove off, the atmosphere in the car was lighter and much more comfortable now.

Insert 36

△

BABALWA

•

We didn't spend much time bonding that evening, I was tired so he fixed the sleeping couch for me since I didn't want to sleep in his room and besides I didn't want to invade his space much so I got comfortable on the couch with the huge blanket he gave me and a fluffy pillow. He kept on asking if I was okay, if I didn't want to take the bed and let him sleep on the couch but I assured him that I was okay with

the couch and I honestly was. I don't know when he left the lounge, he probably went to sleep when he saw that I was finally asleep. Zweli worries too much naye yaz.

I woke up the next morning, well I was woken up by a call from Lifa.

"Morning beautiful" his first words immediately when I answered the phone, I smiled

Me : "Hey baby" he chuckled

Him : "hearing you say that... Mhmmm yeah I am the man shame"

Me : *giggles* "Really now? Cocky so early in the morning"

Him : "Aaah baby early? It's already 8 mos"

Me : "You sound like my mom right now"

Him : *chuckles* "as I pretend as if I didn't hear that, how did you sleep?"

Me : "So peaceful, feel super refreshed. Wena?"

Him : "Oh baby, knowing you're officially mine... I slept with a smile on my face, kept reliving those kisses. Just wanted to know if you're really my girl"

Me : *giggles* "Yes I am" I looked back to check if the coast was still clear and indeed it was "I'm yours"

Him : "Babalwa" he suddenly sounded serious

Me : "Mh?"

Him : *sighs* "I love you"

Me : "I know you do"

Him : "I don't think you understand just how much I do, just how much I want to make you happy" he sighed yet again "kea horata Babalwa" (I love you)

Me : *smiles* "I love you too Mohale"

Him : "Have a great day baby, we will talk on WhatsApp. Running out of airtime"

Me : "Okay, you too. Greet Bandile for me"

Him : "He went to school, I'm all alone. Wish you were here"

Me : "Awww baby, don't worry. Babi will be there soon okay"

Him : *chuckles* "Yeah..." Then the line went dead

I checked the screen and the call had ended, I decided to call him back.

"out of air?" I said as he answered

"Yeah baby, sorry" he said on the other end

Me : "It's okay, thank you for calling me"

Him : "Come on you don't have to.."

Me : "I want to"

Him *sighs* "Okay baby, it's a pleasure"

Me : "Okay, I have to go. Wanna make breakfast"

Him : "Wish you could make me some too"

Me : "someday I will"

Him : "I know you will, bye baby"

Me : "Bye"

I hung up and placed my cellphone on the coffee table near the couch, I reached out for the remote so that I could switch on the tv. The volume was low, I didn't want to wake Zweli up. I switched on my favourite channel then got up from the couch and went to go refresh in the bathroom before going back to the lounge and putting on my gown. It was a bit cold, who am I kidding it is cold as hell here I have no idea why Zweli would want to live by the beach!

I folded the blanket and pillow then placed them in the wardrobe that was in the hallway close to Zweli's bedroom door, I must say that this house was cosy though like the design was beautiful and convenient too. Very spacious for

a one bedroom flat but what can I say? My brother loves nice things, I cleaned around the lounge then made breakfast. Zweli made his grand entrance as I was busy dishing up for the two of us.

"Morning little sis"

Me : "Good morning, you're late as usual" he looked at the time on the watch that was hanging on the wall

Him : "It's only like past 10 and I have nowhere to be" he got a glass of water "stop being like mom please"

Me : "Mhhkay" I handed him his plate

Him : "Thanks" we walked to the lounge "you slept okay?"

Me : "Yeah I did"

Him : "I'm taking the couch tonight"

Me : "Whatever bro" we dug in, while watching

tv.

After breakfast he washed the dishes while I bathed, I slipped into my black jeans and a grey jacket along with my black converse sneakers. My style was very much on the boyish side, I wasn't all that comfortable in skirts and dresses, I felt exposed in those but in jeans now that is where I feel comfortable.

"Put on something nice! We are going to the movies" Zweli shouted

"okay!" I responded

I didn't even feel like dressing up today though! I decided on my vintage denim jean, a black & white striped shirt with my white puma sneakers. I ironed the shirt and changed the clothes I had on at first, my hair was in a neat high bun. No makeup, just the eyebrows and some mascara.

"I'd like to get dressed too you know" he said on

the other side of the door

"Almost done Zwe"

I cleaned up after myself, puffed a few sprays of my perfume that my mom bought me then went out of the room. Zweli was sitting on the couch, pressing away on his phone in just his shorts. He had just came out of the shower.

"I'm done" I said

Him : "Finally, next time I'll wash first"

Me : "I didn't even take long" he stood up and made his way to the room while I sat down on the couch.

I was on my phone chatting with Lifa and Fanisa while he got ready, my mom surprisingly sent a text. She was checking up on Zweli and I, I replied telling her we were fine and she should just enjoy herself no need to worry about us.

`okay baby, mommy loves you` that was her

response.

`I love you too ma` I responded before going to my chats.

Lifa was being a big baby, telling me how lonely he was at the house all by himself. He really wanted me to visit him soon, I said I would come on Saturday. Well seeing as mom would be back on Friday I'd be going home on Friday too and there will be no more Zweli so I could go to him.

`shoot! Baby I can't do Saturday, I'm working remember` he texted

`oh yeah, Monday then?` I replied

`no babe, my going to start working full time now since we are only going back to campus in Feb` he texted

`oh, okay then` so I guess I won't be seeing much of him

`i will see you on my off days angel, I need the money. Bandile is going to spend the holidays with my brother back home, I'm staying cause well I wanna be close to you. Can't leave you here for 2 months, all my off days will be spent with you. I promise ` another one came through `maybe Christmas too if we can` I smiled.

Whatever he does, he always has me in mind. I guess this is how boyfriends act? I don't know but I feel very special right now. He is really making me feel part of his world

`Thank you baby, I'd love that. Don't know about the Christmas story but we will see` I responded

"okay come let's go" Zweli said as he grabbed his keys, I locked my phone and stood up

Me : "I'll go get my purse quickly"

I quickly grabbed my purse, wallet and lip gloss then we left. When we arrived at the mall the

movie was only going to begin in an 45 minutes so Zweli purchased our tickets then we went to go grab a bite at Primi.

Our day was pretty much chilled, we even shopped a bit after the movie, Zweli's treat although it did get just a tiny bit awkward when we bumped into Natasha who was with Junior. Junior saw his father and ran to him, with Natasha who had to chase after him.

"Hi guys" she said when she finally got to us, Junior was already in his father's arms

Me : "hey, fancy seeing you here" I said smiling as I embraced her slightly

Her : *smiles* "Fancy seeing you too. You look great"

Me : *blushing* "thank you" she looked at Zwe

Her : "Hi Zwe"

Him : "Tash" they hugged and I just stood there

looking awkward until they pulled out "you two just get here or?"

Her : "We actually just got here, wanted to buy mister over here some warm clothes for winter"

Him : "I thought we agreed on doing that together"

Her : "Yes but I'm off today, I don't know when I'd get time again before we leave plus I didn't want to mess up your plans. It was short notice"

Him : *clears throat* "Fine, I'll send you some money then or you could let us join you. We were gonna leave but since Junior is here might as well stay" I'm tired hello!!!?

Her : "Okay" Zweli looked at me

Him : "You don't mind right?" Really Zweli? You already... Argh!

Me : *smiles* "I'll uber to your flat it's fine" I looked at Tash "great seeing you"

Zweli : "Babi..."

Me : "No it's okay Zweli, stay but I'm tired so I'll leave"

Him : "You sure?"

Me : "Yes" I took Junior from him and gave him a hug "put the shopping bags in your car"

I left them there and ordered an uber, I missed Lifa though so I thought why not surprise him and Bandile. I ordered an uber to his address and quickly went to get something to eat at the food court for us.

When I arrived in his neighborhood I hoped he was home, I took my phone and called him while I was still inside the uber.

"Baby?" He answered

Me : "Hey uhhhh, can you come outside?"

Him : "Outside?"

Me : "Yeah"

Him : "Baby right now? Outside, as in you are outside?"

Me : "Yes, phuma" (come out)

I hung up and paid my driver then grabbed the bags, I saw him come out from the back that's when I stepped out of the car.

"What are you doing here?" He asked hugging me

Me : "I wanted to see you"

Him : "Trying to get your brother to kill me baby" he pecked my lips "you coming in?" I nodded "okay"

He thanked the driver and took the takeaway bags from me then held my hand as we went inside

Him : "This is a nice surprise, Bandile is going to be chuffed" he opened the door and we went inside, Bandile was on the couch under a fleece

which flew the minute he saw me.

Him : "Sisi!" He ran and flung into my arms

Me : *giggles* "Hi"

Lifa : "Let her come inside first" he let go of me but pulled my hand to the couch. Lifa closed the door

Bandile : "bhuti didn't tell me uzoza kesana(that you're coming), I was going to dress up nam bemhle" (and also look good)

Me : *laughs* "it's a surprise nakuye(for him too), he didn't know ndiyeza"(I'm coming) he covered me and himself with the fleece blanket

Him : " bhuti uzokwenza amaqanda ngoku sitye vah" (is going to make eggs for us so we can eat) I looked at Lifa

Me : "Baby dish up so that we can eat, I'm not staying long"

Him : "Okay baby" he winked at me

Bandile and I bonded on the couch while he spoke away with absolutely no care in the world, he was one bubbly happy child. We ate after a while then I ordered an uber back home, I really wasn't going to stay long. I just wanted to see them cause I really missed Lifa, Bandile was just a bonus.

"thank you for coming baby" he said as we stepped outside and closed the door. He asked that we go wait for the uber outside the bungalow

Me : "You don't have to thank me" he pulled me into a hug

Him : "Well it means a lot to me" I looked up at him and he pecked my lips, I smiled and pecked his back "I love how comfortable and free you are with me" I shyed away and placed my head on his chest again "No rush baby we will get there one day" I felt him sniff the top of my hair "I love you angel"

Me : "I love you too" he squeezed me even harder in his arms

We stayed in that position until my uber arrived then I left, luckily I got home before Zweli. I texted Lifa that everything was good before going to shower and stepping into my pajamas, I made myself a cup of hot chocolate and went to go sit in front of the TV. It wasn't long before Zweli walked in carrying a weekend bag followed by Junior.

"Babzid" he announced as he came in

Me : "Euw don't call me that" Junior joined me on the couch and reached for my cup

Zweli : "don't you dare give him that"

Me : *chuckles* "worse ba uyazithathela akayinikwa ndim" (he's taking it on his own free will I'm not the one giving it to him)

Him : "Babalwa I'm serious" he walked to his room

"Baba ndiphe?" Junior asked in the most cutest tone, I looked back and Zweli was standing right behind the couch

Me : *laughs* "I wasn't going to give him!"

Him : "Mhmmmm, can you monitor him bath please? Going to fetch the shopping bags from the car" I nodded

Me : "Okay"

He walked out and I went to the bathroom with Junior, he did most of the bathing. I helped where necessary, after bathing I helped him into his pajamas and we went to his dad in the lounge. We had a few snacks since everybody had eaten then it was bedtime for everyone.

The week finally came to an end, although I enjoyed myself I missed home and my mom. When we got to the house mama was in the lounge, I threw myself ontop of her.

"oh Babalwa uyasinda kodwa" (you're heavy)

Me : "Ahhh mama I missed you" Junior invited himself into the hug

Him : "khulu" mama pushed me away and hugged him

Me : *giggles* "okay when you want tea you must ask him"

"Mama" Zweli said

Ma : "Hey boy"

Him : "Uright?" She cleared her throat

Her : "Babalwa please go make me a cup of tea baby"

Me : "O-kay" I looked at Zweli "do you want anything?"

Him : "Nah I'm good"

I went to the kitchen and got busy with this tea, I heard Zweli shouting a little. He kept on saying no that isn't happening, not on his watch. When I returned to the lounge with the tea they kept

quiet

"Babalwa please sit baby" my mom said. I sat down next to her

Me : "Is everything okay?"

Her : "Babalwa.."

Zwe : "Mama!"

Her : "Zweli please" he stood up angrily, got Junior and walked out without saying another word

Me : "What's going on?" She handed me a letter
"What is it?"

Her : "Read it"

Insert 37

Δ

BABALWA

•

I could not believe my eyes, I really couldn't.

This was a letter from my father's lawyer, coming from Lungelo asking of me to go see him. I don't want anything to do with him! I am doing so well without him in fact he is dead to me, that has been my coping mechanism this past year and few months. Pretending that he is dead and it has been easy for me because he is locked up, because I don't have to see or hear from him and because we don't touch the subject of him here at home now this! Just hearing he wants to see me scares me, it brings everything! Every single moment when he violated my privacy, my body... My mind, my soul is tormented because of him but things have been positive for me recently that I have been to look at the good side of things but now he wants to bring it all back.

I sat there with that piece of paper in my mind, reading the one sentence which stood alone on it.

'Your father would like to see you' there it stood
My father? I don't have a father! I lost my father
the minute he saw me as his sex object to fulfill
his nasty and revolting urges he could not do to
my mother. I hate him! I hate him so much!

My mother tried to touch me but I jumped out of
fear, you see what this sick man did to me! I
hate you so much Lungelo!

"Mama I hate him" she didn't say anything but
embrace me in her arms allowing me to let it all
out, I sobbed on her chest.

"Xolo mntanam" (I'm sorry my child) she said
this brushing my back whilst planting endless
kisses on my head "He will never get to us again,
he isn't coming out of that prison cell my baby"

Me : "It doesn't take back what he did ma"

Her : "Oh mntanam" she let me cry on her chest
while she rocked me back and fourth.

We sat there like that for a while in silence with me sniffing, yes my mom was there. Yes she was rocking me and holding me in her arms but I couldn't feel her, she was empty. I sat up and she didn't even flinch to me slipping out of her arms, I wiped my cheeks starring at her while she rocked herself starring at the blank TV screen.

"mama" I said this softly but audible yet I got no response from her "ma?" I placed my hand on her shoulder and that's when she looked at me but still she gave me a blank stare.

Her : "I'm so sorry baby, I'd erase everything if I could. I'd have him do all those things to me instead of you, I'd have left him just in time. I'm so sorry I failed you, maybe if I wasn't so sick I would have been a great mother, seen the signs but with everything going on in our marriage I slipped into deep depression and failed you. I'm so sorry baby..."

Me : "Mama" she shook her head and began crying, it was my first seeing her have an emotional breakdown in front of me & it hurt "ma please" my voice was shaky, soon my cheeks were wet too. She stood up and wore her shoes "uyaphi?" (Where are you going?)

Her : "I have to go see him"

Me : "ma?" She started looking around frantically "mama?"

Her : "Where is my bag? Yaz Lungelo always told me to leave my bag on the counter as I come in the house because I always forget where I put things, that's why he bought me that house. Masambe siyendlini Babalwa..." She kept rambling on, this wasn't her.

Me : "Mama" she looked at me "did you take your medication?" She looked at me confused.

I took it upon me to go check her daily capsule from her medicine cabinet and she hadn't taken

them since Wednesday! I didn't even argue with her, I just took the pills with water to her and she drank them.

Me : "when did you get the..." I cleared my throat "the letter?"

Her : "Wednesday morning, it was delivered to me" I sighed, that explains it

Me : "mama you know you have to drink your medication"

Her : "I was okay. I am okay"

Me : *sigh* "go lay down in your room ma"

Her : "Okay"

I helped her up from the couch and she left, I sat there alone looking at the letter laying carelessly on the table. Even from his prison cell he still manages to mess up things for me, for my family more especially mom. I can't have her go back to the clinic, I need her. He needs to

leave us alone, I don't ever want to see him!

I picked up my phone and googled the number of the prison he was in, I don't know if this was a good idea but I wanted him to stay away. To stop contact contacting us, to know that we don't want anything to do with him! When I got the number I dialed it after a lot of contemplation, I explained that I needed to speak to an inmate and they helped me. After a long while of being placed on hold a voice hit my ears that I hadn't prepared myself for.

"Hello?" I suddenly got tongue tied, my throat dried up. My heart practically thumping in my chest feeling like it was about to explode "you said this was an emergency call.." He was speaking to someone in the background. I cleared my throat.

"Dad" my tongue slipped, more like a whisper but he heard me cause he stopped talking on the other hand of the phone.

Him : "Vuyelwa?" He cleared his throat "daddy's princess" tears fell down my cheeks and I shook my heard

Me : "Don't call me that"

Him : "Bab..."

Me : "Stop! Just stop! I..." I suddenly felt some grab my phone.

When I turned around I was met by an angry, no fuming Zweli.

"what the hell is wrong with you Babalwa!?" He shouted

Me : "I just wanted him to leave us alone"

Him : "listen to me, you are not going to see that man, you are not going to contact that man. Let alone speak of him aphe ndlini, ever! Do you understand me?" I nodded with my lips trembling, a sob was threatening to escape my lips any second and he saw it "come" he pulled

me into a hug "I don't mean to shout but that man is nothing to us Babalwa, he is poisonous. We don't need him in our lives. I'm just trying to protect you, protect ma. All of us, he is sick in his head and refuses to admit it please just..." He sighed "stay away, focus on healing. Your recovery is important please" I nodded with my head on his chest "I love you"

Me : "I love you too" he sighed, pulled out of the hug and wiped my wet cheeks

Him : "You're beautiful inside & out, don't you ever forget that sis" I nodded

Me : "I won't"

Him : "Won't what?"

Me : "Forget it"

Him : "forget what? I want to hear you say it"

Me : "I won't forget that I am beautiful" I took a deep breath "inside and out"

Him : "Uphi umama?"

Me : "Napping" I sighed "she hasn't been taking her meds since Wednesday"

Him : "What? Why can't mama be responsible na.."

Me : "it's the letter, it disturbed her"

Him : "What about you?"

Me : "Me?"

Him : "Yes, how are you feeling?" I sighed sitting down on the couch

Me : "I don't know, I guess I'm okay"

Him : "I'm here if you need anything, you know that right?" I nodded

Me : "I think I'm going to go lay down"

Him : "okay" I stood up and left him in the couch.

I closed the door and threw myself on the bed, it suddenly all came like episodes in my head. It

haunts me, I popped two sleeping pills before sliding into my blankets. I didn't want to think about it anymore, about him or any of it. It's in the past now! I'm in a better place right? Yes I am, I am. I'm happy.

My cellphone rang disrupting my trail of thought, I wiped my wet cheeks to check the obvious it was Lifa. I just starred at the screen, I don't know what he sees in me and I'm scared of what he will see in me once I tell him what happened. I don't want to loose it, this us thing we have going. My very first relationship, I enjoy it but it's not fair on him. On myself because I'm not giving him my all, keeping parts of my life a secret whilst he openly talks about himself leaving himself vulnerable to me yet I can't do the same. I don't deserve him. He is so good to me, I don't...

Again my trail of thought disturbed by my phone, like always not giving up when he can't reach

me. I answered cause I know he won't stop
"baby! Finally, hey angel" he said cheerfully,
almost sounding relieved

Me : "Hey yourself" I tried my very best to sound
okay

Him : "How is my baby doing? You don't sound
okay"

Me : *clears throat* "just a headache but I'm
okay, how are you?"

Him : "Well I was fine till now, you sure it's just a
headache? You sound down"

Me : *sighs* "Yeah, I'm gonna take a nap now"

Him : "Baby wait..."

I just hung up and put my phone on silent
before covering my head with the blanket. I just
wanted to die, I wanna tell the truth so bad but
I'm failing to. I closed my eyes trying to block
out all thoughts connected to the PAST which

seems so hard to forget, I doubt I'll forget but I'm tired. Tired of it all.

When I woke up it was dark out, a true power nap. I checked the time on my phone and it was around to 8 at night, those pills really knocked me out. I had missed calls from Lifa, a few texts too. I didn't have the energy for them right now, I got up and went to go take a nice long bath before putting on my pajamas, my stomach grumbled. I went out of my room to the lounge, Zweli was there but with Junior now and they were watching television whilst eating. He turned around to look at me when he heard the sound of me dragging my slippers

Me : "I thought you'd be gone"

Him : "couldn't leave you and ma here alone" I nodded "I got us takeout, you can go warm up for yourself"

Me : "What about mama?"

Him : "She already ate, she's in the bedroom with the girls"

Me : "Oh they are here too?" He nodded looking back at the TV

I went to the kitchen and fixed myself a plate with some coldrink then returned to the lounge and ate while watching TV with the two of them, Zweli left me to go give Junior a bath and also tuck him into bed. I didn't want to be alone so I switched off the tv after eating and went to my mother's room, the lights were deemed down and she was getting into bed.

Me : "Can I sleep here?"

Her : *smiles* "There's enough space baby, come" I smiled back and joined them on the bed "How are you feeling now?"

Me : "I'll be fine, just need to see Ashley"

Her : "That's a good idea, I'm seeing my psychologist too *sighs* I apologize about

earlier, I'm really trying to..."

Me : "It's okay mommy"

Her : "No baby I..."

Me : "Mama stop stressing, it is really okay. I know how hard you are trying and how this isn't easy for neither one of us. Thank you for that"

Her : "I feel like I took you steps back with that letter"

Me : "mama stop please, I'm fine"

Her : "Okay" I looked besides me, starring at the two girls laying in the middle of us. They looked so adorable sleeping with so much peace and tranquility. Something I long for, something I felt I was getting close to but now suddenly feel so far away from. "Good night Vuyelwa"

Me : "Night ma"

Her : "Say your prayer's before you sleep"

Me : "I will"

I laid there awake most of the night, when sleep was starting to kick in I tried. Really I did try to pray but all I could say was Dear Lord and nothing else after that. I slept without a word of thanks that evening. I woke up feeling a bit better Saturday morning, returned to my room and my phone screen was on. It was ringing but since I had placed it on silence last night there was no ringtone.

"Hello" i answered

Him : *sigh* "Baby"

Me : "Mh?"

Him : "Did I do something wrong?"

Me : "No you didn't"

Him : "Then why am I being ignored baby keng?"

Me : "I told you I..."

Him : "Babalwa stop lying please" I sighed

Me : "I don't know what you want me to say"

Him : "The truth would be a starting point,
maybe trusting me too"

Me : "Baby there's nothing wrong with me"

Him : "I'm worried about you angel" he sighed

Me : "Don't be okay? Like I'm fine, really am"

Him : "Babe"

Me : "Yes baby?"

Him : "I love you" that went straight to the heart
"do you hear me?"

Me : "Ye..yes I do"

Him : "when I say that I mean everything about
you, whether it be good or bad. I accept & love
you just as you are" I kept quiet yet again "say
someting"

Me : "I don't know why you love me"

Him : "And even if I tried angel you still wouldn't
understand why I've fallen so deeply in the sea

of love for you" I swallowed "I have to go baby, I'm about to start my shift"

Me : "Have a great day"

Him : "I'll call you again, keep your phone closeby"

Me : "I will"

Him : "Okay, try and have a great day too baby. Bye"

He hung up and I threw my phone on the bed.

Insert 38

Δ

LIFA

•

My day at work was utterly exhausting but I did try by all means to send cute little texts to Babsie just to make her smile a little because I could hear from the call earlier that my baby

wasn't all that good. I just hope that whatever it is she'll tell me what it is, I mean I love her and I share everything with her it just hurts that she feels the need to hide stuff from me. It shows her lack of trust in me but I don't blame her, not after what happened to her.

When my shift ended, I gathered all my things and went home with the transport provided to us by the restaurant since we come out so late. Arriving home, Bandile was already tucked in bed. When I work late they tuck him in for me after a day of looking after him. I switched on the kettle because I wanted to bath quickly before going to sleep. By the time I finished with everything I was farmished, I had something to eat and got into bed. I would call Babsie but it is late, I doubt she is awake so I'll do that in the morning.

The way I was tired ngakhona it didn't take long for sleep to take over, I noticed this because my

phone rang waking me up.

"Mh?" I answered, it was still dark meaning it was still nighttime

"Baby" I woke up almost immediately, I checked the screen for the Id and it was her. The time was around 2am

Me : "Angel?"

Her : "I didn't mean to wake you, I just.." She sighed "I miss you"

Me : "it's okay baby, I miss you even more"

Her : "You do?"

Me : *chuckles* "of course I do baby" I yawned "whats keeping you up?"

Her : "you"

Me : "Me?"

Her : "yes" there was a pause, a moment of silence "you are an amazing person" she finally

said

Me : "only because of how gracious you are"

Her : "I don't think I am"

Me : "that's where you are wrong. You are so much more than what you think of yourself, I await for the day you finally realize how much of a queen you are, hoping that I am in some way helping you see that. Getting closer to that but it's all on you baby"

Her : "I don't understand"

Me : *sighs* "love"

Her : "Yeah?"

Me : "do you know how beautiful you are?"

Her : "only how beautiful you make me out to be"

Me : "wena what do you think?"

Her : "of?"

Me : "yourself" she kept quiet "baby"

Her : "I don't know"

Me : "There are women and then there is a woman. A certain type, a rare breed. Look I know you don't get what I'm saying here but that's neither here or there. What I'm really trying to say here is; there's just this woman, she is the quintessence of everything beautiful. I may attempt to describe her but she carries no adjectives of description. From here, I submarine" I sighed "you are that woman baby"

Her : "Lifa... Baby I need to see you"

Me : "I can come see you before my shift starts tomorrow?"

Her : "okay, I'll make an excuse not to go to church tomorrow"

Me : "okay my angel, how was your day?"

Her : "It was okay, spent it with mom and Zwe.

Guess what?"

Me : "too sleepy to guess now baby"

Her : *giggles* "don't be a bore"

Me : "Tell me what it is kaloku"

Her : "Zweli suggested that I go write my learners and I'm thinking maybe your girl might be getting a car soon!!"

Me : *chuckles* "So much excitement"

Her : "yes baby! I'll be able to come to whenever I want"

Me : *laughs* "Then your brother installs a tracker on the car, shows up at my doorstep and beats me to a pulp" she giggled

Her : "I won't let him do that to you"

Me : "you gonna have to stop him baby cause I won't be able to fight back, he's your brother"

Her : "and he's overprotective" I yawned

Me : "baby" I was tired

Her : "nooooo" she knew what I wanted

Me : "please baby I'm tired"

Her : "I missed you the whole day"

Me : "and you'll see me tomorrow, late morning"

Her : *sighs* "okay"

Me : "I love you"

Her : "I love you"

Me : "Kisses?"

Her : "andifuni" (I don't want to)

Me : "Babsie baby"

Her : *giggles* "fine bye" she kissed the speaker

Me : "good night angel" I kissed the speaker
then hung up.

It didn't take long for me to fall asleep again.

Waking up in the morning was hard, really was

but I had to because I had to make Bandile something to eat. After doing so I made myself a cup of coffee, sent my baby a good morning message then cleaned around the bungalow. I put all the dirty clothes in the washing machine that was in the bathroom outside.

When I was done cleaning I got water ready for Bandile to wash then took out clean clothes for him to wear. I wanted to leave him clean and full, he was going to church with the landlord/babysitter. I gave him some money to buy snacks before he left. I only bathed when he was gone, applied lotion and wore my boxers while I ironed my black chino pants that I wore for work and a white shirt. Just as I was finishing off my phone rang, I thought it would be Babsie but it was my brother

"what's up?" I answered

Him : "You good?" I sat down

Me : "Yeah, wena o sharp?" (You good)

Him : "Sure mfana, you got his shit ready?"

Me : "Awe, what time are you landing?"

Him : "in the morning and I'm not staying"

Me : "how long are you going to keep sulking bro?"

Him : "sharp sani"

Me : "Mafa ntwana"

Him : "Stay there, hakere you don't care kanna"

Me : "come on it's not even like that"

Him : "sure" he hung up

Sigh, I put my phone away. It would be pointless trying to make him see light but I don't want to go home this holiday. There's nothing for me there.

"Baby I'm outside" I said as soon as she picked up her phone

Her : "okay, I'll buzz you in"

Me : "wha.. " beep, I looked at the screen and she had hung up.

The gate opened and I walked in, she stood by the door watching me walk in wearing black tights and a tshirt walking with socks on.

Me : "Hey you" I wrapped my arms around her waist pulling her into a hug

Her : "hey" I felt her bury her face in my neck "you smell nice" we pulled out of the hug

Me : "Thank you"

Her : "come in" I just stood by the doorway "I'm alone"

Me : "Baby" she pulled me inside and closed the door

Her : "Want anything to drink?" She walked in front of me

Me : "Nah I'm good"

Her : "I'll get you some juice, I made pancakes"

Me : *chuckles* "Fine"

She led me to the lounge, I sat down while she disappeared into the kitchen. Although she had told me to make myself comfortable I couldn't.

"Loosen up" she said as she made her way back into the lounge with a tray. She placed on the coffee table and sat close to me "you look so nice in your uniform"

Me : *chuckles* "thank you baby"

Her : "try one" she handed me a plate with 2 pancakes

Me : "Don't know if I trust you in the kitchen"

Her : "Well you will after this"

Me : *smirks* "Ms Confident, I like" she shyed away by taking a huge gulp of her juice. I had a huge portion of the pancake and honestly it was good, it melted in my mouth!

Her : *laughs* "told you"

Me : "okay okay, they are good" she sat close to me and we shared them until we eventually finished "baby"

Her : "Mh?" She was putting her glass back on the tray, she faced me

Me : "I'm here now, talk to me" she forced a smile as she sat back on the couch

Her : "Ummm, where do I start" she let out a deep breathe "there is something I have been keeping from you"

Me : "Okay?"

Her : "Something big, something... Something I don't even know how to articulate, I'm scared. Scared of your reaction to what I'm about to say but I feel I have to if I claim to love you. I owe it to you"

Me : *nods* "I'm listening" she looked down at

her fingers

Her : "okay, ummm I... Well my dad, my dad is in prison" she looked up to see or maybe read my face then back to her fingers. I took them into mine

Me : "it's okay baby, talk to me" she bit on her bottom lip, blinking repeatedly and I squeezed her hands

Her : "he is in there because he... He molested me" she shut her eyes after saying that and tears voluntarily fell down her cheeks. She finally opened up to me, finally trusts me. I pulled her into my arms as she sniffed

Me : "It's going to be okay" I caressed her back "it will get better, you will recover baby. I'm not leaving you because of this nor do I love you any less. In actual fact I love you so much for being so extraordinarily strong, for not giving up." She sat up and looked at me, I wiped her

cheeks smiling "I meant it when I said I love you beautiful, I mean each and every word"

Her : "even though..."

Me : "It doesn't change anything Babsie" she smiled "I love you baby" I cupped her face "may I?" She nodded looked into my eyes and I moved in closer softly laying my lips unto hers as she welcomed me, her hands rested on my wrists. The way she was kissing me today was different, more like she was now comfortable so to say, free. I pulled out of the kiss and she looked at me

Her : "I love you too" I smiled so did she, I pecked her lips

Me : "Thank you"

Her : *smiling* "What for..?"

Me : "Trusting me" I pecked her lips yet again "I won't break that trust" she breathed out and nodded we locked foreheads

"I don't want to loose what we have" she said suddenly

"You won't" I kissed her forehead and she hugged me tightly "hey,I'm not going anywhere" I hugged her back tighter "believe that" I kissed the top of her head and she nodded.

Insert 39

Δ

LIFA

•

After the exhausting day at work, I finally got back home. As always Bandile is fast asleep, I decide to get rid of my hunger first before taking a quick bath as I still had to pack for Bandile but first had to sort out the laundry that was on the couch before packing for Bandile. By the time I got done all I wanted was my sleep!

The following morning I was woken up by my

alarm, I quickly woke up and made porridge before waking up my little bro to bath. He was so excited about the arrival of our brother, to be honest I was too. I really missed him, this year was our first apart and it hasn't been the same so I understand why he isn't impressed by me not coming home these holidays.

"Bhuti zonxiba nike yam neh?" (I'm wearing my nikey) he asked as he applied lotion and I was debating on what I should take out from the little clothes he had left in his shelf

Me : *nods* "sure boys"

Him : "yesssss!" I chuckled shaking my head, he only wore his good clothes when he was going somewhere. So whenever he got the chance to it was a big thing for him, I handed him the pants

Me : "put on your pants and tshirt, you'll wear your jacket when you are done eating"

Him : "Okay but ndiyi big boy nje andizochitha"
(I'm a big boy I won't mess on myself)

Me : "just do as I say boys" he nodded and got dressed.

I cleaned up after him then dished for him and myself, after eating I bathed while he watched tv and wore my cotton shorts which were black with a black T-shirt along with my push ins. I brushed my hair just for neatness. I heard a hoot outside while I was cleaning up, I put everything away then went out and there was my brother in his car parked outside the yard. He had new wheels!

"Bandile come boys!" I exclaimed with excited, we made our way towards him and he came out the car. That's when Bandile ran to him, we shared hugs before going inside.

Me : "Why didn't you tell me you're here already?
I was waiting for your call or text"

Him : *chuckles* "Come on little bro and ruin the surprise?" I grunted

Me : "younger just by 5 minutes!" He laughed

Him : "I love how you always get worked up" I shook my head, it's always been an amusing subject for him. Being able to rub it in my face every second he gets that he's older

Me : "You drove here" he nodded "I thought you're flying..."

Him : "We are flying back"

Me : "And the car? Why are you wasting money? Do you know how much it will cost you to fly it back home?"

Him : *chuckles* "nah bro, I'm leaving it here for you" he said it like it's nothing, I mean that car looked brand spanking new and it was my favourite wheels, an audi

Me : *stunned* "legit?" He smirked whilst

nodding "don't talk shit bro"

Him : "You think I'd play you like that bru? Nah, it's yours. I got it for you in the first place" I appreciate the gesture but it doesn't sit easy with me knowing the things he does to make money

Me : "Mafa" I suddenly got serious

Him : "No don't do that, I'm trying here just let me"

Me : "ntwana you don't have to do this, just move this side. We need you" if he gets in university he can leave all this illegal activities he is busy with.

Him : "You know I have my own little family back home bru, I can't leave my kid and my girl there. I don't even like this place" I nod and glance over at Bandile who was locked on Mafa's phone playing a game with a packet of crispy chips on the side that he got in Mafa's I

mean my car I guess?

Me : "make sure nothing happens to him"

Him : "you know it, oh and one more thing?"

Me : "What?"

Him : "Can you take me to Milnerton before dropping us off at the airport?"

Me : "What do you want there?" He gave me a look "thought you don't like it here, yet you want to go to Milnerton"

Him : "nigga you gonna take me or nah?"

Me : "chill"

I grabbed my cap and cellphone, then off we went. He told me where in Milnerton he wanted to go, I wasn't all that familiar with the place had to use the gps. We ended up arriving at a complex which looked fairly new.

"Who do you know here?" I asked as we made our way inside, he ignored me while he walked

in front of me with Bandile. I just followed behind him, he went to go speak to the security only then did they let us in "are you just gonna go mute on me after I brought you here?"

Him : "chill out"

Me : "what are we doing here bru?" He took keys out of his pocket and opened the door in front of us. He walked in and I followed, looking at him for answers. The place was fully furnished,one could see that everything was brand new.

"I'm tired of having you two living in that bungalow Lifa" he finally said as he placed the keys on the counter and turning to face me "so I decided to get y'all in here, I'll pay for everything every month..." I shook my head

Me : "no"

Him : "Lifa stop thinking with your..."

Me : "I said no!" He sighed before tighten his

jaw

Him : "Can you for once not think only about you!? Our brother can't stay in that environment, he deserves better and I'm trying here! Everything I do is for us dammit"

Me : "he is fine! We are fine!"

Him : "Lifa!" I looked at Bandile who was starring at us

Me : "Let's go" he looked at Mafa for approval and he nodded before making his way towards me "You'll find us in the car"

I walked out with Bandile. We went to wait for Mafa in the car.

"Bhuti why u'angry?" (Why are you angry)

Bandile asked after a while of sitting in silence

Me : "I'm not angry boys" he sighed

Him : "mna I don't like when bhuti fights, it makes my heart sore" I looked at him through

the rearview mirror

Me : "Ke kopa tswarello boys" (I'm sorry)

Him : "Okay" he smiled "nanku ubhuti esiza"
(here comes Mafa)

I looked forward and he was indeed making his way to the car, he got in and buckled up without saying a word. I started the car ignition and drove off, all roads led to the airport. No one said a word on our way there not even Bandile. When we got at the airport, it was around to 9 and their flight was only going to take off at 10h00am so we sat in the car for a while.

"Lifa?" I was just watching people move up and down the parking lot

Me : "Yeah"

Him : "Have you got my back or what?" I turned to face him

Me : "Of course I do ntwana..."

Him : "doesn't seem like it" he sighed as he put his phone in his pocket and also looked ahead "As much as you know we may joke about it but I'm the oldest, when we lost mom and dad I had to do something. For you to keep judging me because of the choices I made to make sure we were good all the time, that right there is foul. Everything I do is for us, I'm only trying to help. That complex is way better than where you live right now so stop being stubborn over bullshit and accept it or else I'm taking Bandile to live with Lebohang and I"

Me : "so you wanna take him from me!?"

Him : "I want what is best for him!"

Me : "I am what's best for him and you know it"

Him : "He is my brother too dammit, I don't want him living in that environment"

Me : "Fine" he looked at me "we are going to move to the apartment"

Him : "Thank you" I nodded "I love you bro"

Me : *sighs* "I should be thanking you, we are here now because of you... I'm just tryna say thank you bro, even though I don't fucks with how you did it. You pulled through for us and you still are I mean look at this" I brushed the steering wheel "Jah neh, ho monate!"

After a while I had to leave because my shift was gonna begin around 11 so I rushed home for my uniform and made my way to work, I just ! Just made it on time. As soon as I clocked in I was fully focused on my job and keeping my customers happy, I needed the tips. I had to spoil my girl, take her out especially now that I have wheels we are free to move around whenever, Mafa isn't so bad after all . I knocked off worklate at night, I had been given the day off for the next day.

Arriving home with no Bandile in sight was kind of wierd, the bungalow was cold. I closed the

windows and curtains before switching on the lights, grabbed my phone and dialed Babalwa's number after reading the messages from Mafa telling me they had arrived safely. Unlike the usual where she would answer on the first ring, today she took some time to pick up but when she eventually did she didn't even sound at all happy to hear from me.

"Hi" she answered

Me : "baby, hello angel" she laughed, it was a sarcastic laugh

Her : "lol hi"

Me : "O-kay, have I done something wrong?"

Her : "nothing, you've done absolutely nothing"

Me : "Bab..."

Her : "look I'm tired, I'd like to sleep please"

Me : "ummm yeah okay. Can I see you tomorrow?"

Her : "whatever Lifa bye" just like that she hung up on me

I decided to give her space, I stripped down to my boxers and got into bed. I was tired, didn't even feel like bathing especially after that call. Just as I was falling asleep I was woken up a call, it was Bandile calling from Mafa's phone , boys was busy telling me about how much fun he was having and that I was missing out on the nice food Lebo was cooking talk about an insult to my dusty kitchen skills ! Well I am not the best cook but I try we spoke until Mafa took the phone, we spoke just a tiny bit before bidding farewell and I went back to sleep again.

The next morning I woke nice and early, cleaned and began packing up my stuff. I only needed the clothes though because Mafa had already gotten the apartment furnished so I was going to leave the things there. I spoke to my landlord

and explained to her that I was moving out, gave her the money I owed to her before putting everything in the car. To be honest I was excited about this move, things were slowly moving in a good direction for me.

When I got to the apartment I was too lazy to unpack, I just showered. Oh God when last did I get to shower! Jah neh, ho monate ka nnete.

"Baby please come outside tuu" I begged as soon as she picked up her phone

Her : *sighs* "5 minutes"

Me : "No problem" she hung up

I got out of the car and waited for her, I met her halfway as she walked out the gate and hugged her she hugged me back and pulled away quickly. I was smiling happy to see her but she didn't seem to share the same sentiments.

Me : "Baby keng na?" (What's up)

Her : "Nothing"

Me : "No I'm seriously confused as to why I'm getting the cold shoulder baby what did I do wrong?"

Her : "You've been quiet Lifa that's what is wrong! Extremely quiet right after I told you about the thing with my dad! How do you expect me to feel?"

Me : "Whoah what?"

Her : "You don't want me anymore is that it?"

Me : "No baby come on, I have been busy that's all. Mafa came to fetch Bandile and just threw some stuff at me that I wasn't expecting. I'm sorry okay? I'm sorry for neglecting my baby" she blushed and I pulled her towards me "Can I get a proper hug now baby?" She smiled and embraced me "I'm sorry for making you miss me so much neh" she giggled as she pulled out

Her : "I didn't miss you thaaat much" I smiled

slightly pulling her cheek

Me : "I'm sure you didn't"

Her : "Well you seem different today, what's going on?"

Me : "Different how?"

Her : "I don't know baby just different"

Me : *smirks* "Maybe it's because your man has wheels now" she looked at me confused

Her : "Wheels?" I nodded, turned around and unlocked the car "what!? That's yours?" I nodded "omg baby it's so pretty, well not pretty pretty but beast sportsy pretty"

Me : *laughs* "Whatever that means" we walked towards it

Her : "But how... I mean where" she sighed "I'm not trying to offend you or anything baby but how are you... Argh never mind"

Me : "My brother got it for me"

Her : "Oh?" I nodded

Me : "Wanna know how it feels to ride in her?"

Her : "yeah sure"

Me : "Okay, go lock up"

She went to lock up and we drove around then eventually went to the complex. She was confused but didn't ask anything until we eventually walked in.

"Okay baby what are we doing here?"

Me : "I live here"

Her : "You live here now?" I nodded and opened the door, we made our way in "wow"

Me : "You like it?" She nodded "I didn't really have time to unpack baby soo"

Her : "It's okay" she said still looking around, I stood next to her

Me : "you gonna help me unpack right?" She

laughed

Her : "I knew it" I hooked my arm around her neck

Me : "Pretty please baby, imagine me doing all this by myself? Yhuu hay"

Her : *laughs* "Okay, I'll help" I pulled her closer and pecked her forehead

Me : "Thank you" I pecked her lips "You're an angel"

Her : *smiles* "so you say"

Me : "forgot to tell you how beautiful you look today" she blushed

Her : "thank you baby"

Me : "Yes Babsie, Lifa is your baby. Nobody else" I winked at her and she smiled "You look gorgeous baby"

Her : "Stoop" she tried to unhook my arm from her but I pulled her closer

Me : "Okay I'll stop, I'll stop" she starred at me
"can I get a kiss?" She nodded, I pouted. She
giggled before placing a peck on my lips

"Babyyy" she was short, I just stood there not
bending or anything

Me : "Okay" I picked her up and placed her on
the counter, stood in between her legs and
claimed her lips before she could say anything.
She responded while wrapping her arms around
my neck and mine rested on her waist
caressing it, I could feel myself getting hard so I
pulled out and looked at her "thank you" she
smiled

Her : "what for?" I pecked her lips

Me : "Everything" I pecked her lips again "I love
you Babalwa"

Her : "I love you too" I kissed her forehead and
she giggled before pulling me into a hug, I
smiled and kissed the side of her head

Me : "I know baby, I feel the same way too" I picked her up from the counter and she squealed

Her : "don't let me fall" she held on tight with her legs wrapped around my waist

Me : "Never" she looked at me and we kissed again but I stopped it as soon as I felt Mokoena waking up again "let's unpack shall we?" She smiled and nodded.

I put her down, we got right to it. We finished after a long ass time cause we kept playing around. When we did finish though we were hungry, I suggested takeaways but Babalwa said it would be best if I bought groceries instead. She promised to cook just this time, of course I said yes! I mean I would love a home cooked meal by someone else not me.

When we returned from the store, I helped her where she asked me too but she did most of

the cooking by herself with me watching her. We ate and then realized that it was in fact getting late so I had to go drop her off. I got my jacket and we made our way out, there was some voices outside. I had not yet gotten to see my neighbours since I moved in her, Babalwa stopped in her tracks.

Me : "What's up?" She didn't respond, her eyes were locked on whatever she was looking at. I looked that way too and there he was fuming! Arg fuck! Shit! Shi...

"What is this Babalwa!?"

Insert 40

△

BABALWA

•

At this point all I can think of is what am I going to say? How do I explain the position I find

myself in, honestly there was no way out of this one now all I was worried about was what Zweli was going to do. I mean you never know with Zweli he is unpredictable! And it scares me sometimes...

"I asked you a question Babalwa" he said clearly waiting for me to say something. He was coming out of the apartment 2 doors away from Lifa's apartment. I don't know who the guy he was with because I'm not familiar with his friends but at that moment I wish he could just pull Zweli away or something but he just stood there! Zweli looked at me fuming and I swallowed

Me : "Bhuti...hi" It came out as a whisper, I really did not expect this.

Him : "Follow me right now!" He turned and walked away, I looked at Lifa

Me : "Bye"

"Now Babalwa!" He roared and Lifa mouthed I'm sorry.

I walked away and followed behind Zweli, he walked to his car and got in waiting for me. I got inside and swallowed.

"Safety belt" he said coldly, I put it on without saying a word

Me : "Bhuti I..." He shook his head with his jaw clenched and I shut my mouth.

Before I knew it he jumped out of the car and locked it with me inside without me registering anything and made his way inside, I quickly reached for my phone and dialed Lifa's number. He answered on the first ring like he knew it was an emergency

"baby is everything.." He said as soon as he picked up but I didn't let him finish

Me : "lock the door quickly please!"

Him : "What?"

Me : "Lifa, now! Lock the door now!"

Him : "Baby keng na? Bua, ke..." Then the line went dead

Zweli is so unpredictable, I just sat in the car waiting for him anxiously. I was stressing about what was going on in there, I can't believe he locked me in the damn car Zweli! Arggh. I wiped my wet cheeks, I had to calm down. After a while of waiting he made his way towards the car looking like nothing happened, he didn't even look angry anymore. He got into the car, I looked at him waiting for him to say something but he didn't, instead he just switched on the car ignition and drove away. I decided to keep quiet too and just looked out the window, he drove us home. As soon as he stopped in front of the gate, I took off my safety belt and grabbed my sling bag from my feet but when I tried to open the door it was locked. I sighed

"Zweli can you open up please?" He looked at me

Him : "So you have a boyfriend ngoku?" I sat there in silence and looked out the window "I'm asking you a question Babalwa" I exhaled deeply

Me : "e...ewe bhuti" I quickly bit my lip after saying that still not making eye contact

Him : "I see" we sat there in silence "Are you sure about this boy Babalwa?" I nodded "If he hurts you I'm giving both of you a hiding" I giggled then looked at him

Me : "So you're giving me permission?"

Him : "I spoke to him"

Me : "Just spoke right?" He chuckled then unlocked the doors

Him : "Go inside"

Me : "Bhuti?"

Him : "Hamba Babalwa" I looked at him and he took out his phone, I shook my head and stepped out of the car then I remembered

Me : "bhuti are you stalking me?" He burst out in laughter

Him : "What!? Psssh please, I have a life you know"

Me : "Then what were you doing there?"

Him : "I went to go see a teammate of mine not that it concerns you" I nodded

Me : "Thank you for the ride" he nodded "bye"

Him : "sure and behave"

Me : "I always behave" I closed the door and walked towards the gate.

Mom was still not back home, I decided to hit the pots immediately. While that was busy I grabbed my phone and tried to call Lifa once again and he answered finally!

Me : "Baby, are you okay?" He chuckled slightly

Him : "Angel, I'm okay... Are you?"

Me : "I'm fine, what happened?"

Him : "Nothing to worry your pretty face over beautiful"

Me : "did he hit you? You know what never mind, I'll come see you tomorrow morning"

Him : "No no, thats not necessary baby I'm fine"

Me : "I want to see with my very own eyes, I'm busy cooking right now..."

Him : "Angel, I'm fine. I just want to sleep cause I'm tired and have work tomorrow"

Me : "But..."

Him : "I'm okay" I sighed

Me : "Promise?"

Him : "I promise"

Me : "Okay, good night then"

Him : "Good night beautiful, thank you for coming today"

Me : "You don't have to thank me, you know I enjoy spending time with you"

Him : "Not as much as I do" I blushed and he chuckled " I love you okay?"

Me : "I love you too Lifa" he blew me kisses over the phone, so did I then we hung up.

I quickly finished up and dished up for ma & myself, mama arrived just as I was finishing up with plating our food.

"Mhhmmn smells so nice" she exclaimed as she entered the kitchen, she walked over to me and pecked my cheek "I'm so tired mntanam, had meetings with parents today" she sighed and made her way to the fridge

Me : "Go sit I'll bring your food and a glass of juice to you" she stopped in her tracks

Her : "You are an angel" I smiled and she made her way out, she seemed pretty exhausted but happy if I can say? At peace with the way things were I guess.

I warmed her plate a little then poured her some juice, served her while she had her eyes locked on the TV screen with news playing. I got my plate and joined her, we ate supper and she even asked about Lifa. I told her we were okay, did not mention the brief meeting between Zweli, Lifa and I. That's if I can even call it a meeting!

After supper I washed the dishes while mama went off to bed, she was exhausted and I didn't blame her as I also didn't stay long. I went straight to bed when I was finished and retired to bed, falling into a deep slumber.

"Babalwa" I heard my mom's voice call out whilst I was still in deep sleep

"Mh?" I answered back covering my head with the blanket as the light pierced through my eye lids

"Your brother is here, apparently you are going to work with him so get ready" she said, I withdrew the blanket from my body

Me : "What!?"

Her : "Get ready Babalwa, he is in the lounge waiting. I have to leave"

Me : "Okay" she stood still by the door not moving "I'm coming ma"

Her : "I'm waiting" i groaned as I slowly made my way out of bed and dragged myself to my bathroom

Me : "Kodwa (but) how can Zweli just spring this on me, what if I had plans"

Her : "What plans? You barely visit any friends, you're always home going to work with him

might do you good so get ready" this is just his tactic to get me to spend less time with Lifa! But whatever I'll give him what he wants "Enjoy your day" I turned around

Me : "You too"

Her : "And I love you"

Me : "Why must you always make it seem like you are going to die ma" she giggled

Her : "So I can't tell my child I love her?"

Me : "I mean you can but..."

Her : "Then don't ask me nonsense okay baby?"

Me : *sighs* "I love you too mama" she walked out closing the door behind her.

I took a quick shower and got ready, I didn't even know what to wear. I really don't understand how Zweli can just spring this on me though really. I took out a black pair of skinny jeans with my white high low kelso top

along with my blacket jacket, it had that whole professional yet casual thing going on to top it all of I wore my strap heel that I usually wear to church. My hair was neatly tied up.

By the time I was done and made my way into the lounge, Zweli rushed me out I couldn't even have breakfast. I silently laughed aside, that's what you get for trying to be clever

"I'll buy you something on the way there! Just come" he was already jogging outside the house towards his car leaving me behind, I locked up and made my way to the car.

Me : "so what am I gonna do there the whole day?"

Him : "Learn more about what you're studying, you are going to do job shadowing"

Me : "I'm still in first year Zwe"

Him : "I know but maybe this will motivate you even more"

Me : "You could have told me about it" I mumbled

Him : "I'm sorry, what was that?"

Me : "Nothing"

Him : "Mhhhh"

We drove in silence, he didn't even make my breakfast pit stop! I had to go get something to eat at the cafeteria with people greeting and exclaiming about how old I had gotten, asking what I was doing now etc. I hated every minute of it! Finally late morning Zweli took me to my mentor, that's when things started getting better, even forget that I was practically forced to be here.

Lol, my mentor was a girl and she was hilarious! Zweli popped up in her office around lunch, we were busy laughing but I quickly maintained my cool, I didn't want him thinking I was enjoying myself even though I was just for the

sake of sulking.

"Can I steal her for lunch?" He said after greeting

Noèll : "Sure, I was actually about to send her up to you" he chuckled

Him : "Great then, Babi let's go"

We went to my favourite spot for lunch and had a talk, my brother was just looking out for me *sigh* I'll forever be grateful for him always going out of his way for me, might not agree with his methods but hey . My first day at 'work' was okay, we went to get mom and went out for dinner as a family unit.

The job shadowing gig wasn't so bad after all although it meant less time with Lifa I enjoyed it, I think that was somehow Zweli's plan, me spending less time with Lifa that is but we not breaking up. Hell to the no! We were now in January, mama had sent me money to go

shopping well I needed new clothes for this new year and since Lifa was off we were going together.

In the morning I woke up to an empty house, mama must have left already. I was exhausted she needed my help last night with some paperwork and financial reports, she must get an assistant. Running a crèche is not child's play, excuse the pun.

I rolled out of bed and went straight to the bathroom to get cleaned up & ready for the day, I didn't go extra or anything just a simple lose cotton pants and a vest with sandals, it's January so the sun is out and blazing. So I went for a rather chilled look today, well I'm always chilled. As I was busy combing my hair, a call came through. I knew exactly who it was, he is always early whenever we have plans.

"baby?" I answered

Him : "Love, I'm outside"

Me : "Uhhh, please give me a few more minutes I'm not done yet."

Him : "How not done are you?" I giggled

Me : "Baby I'll just open up for you" he sighed
"Okay, okay! I'm coming"

Him : "Now babe"

Me : "Yes baby patience, I'll be there now now"

I hung up and combed my hair down, grabbed my handbag and an apple then rushed outside. He stepped outside the car when he saw me coming out of the gate and gave me a tight squeeze.

"Baby" he kissed the side of my head

Me : "hey" we pulled out of the hug and he walked to the passenger side opening the door for me "thank you" I got in and he closed the door before jogging to his side

"So how are you? Ready for today?" I nodded cause I had already begun eating my apple

Me : "it's just shopping"

Him : "mhmmm" he leaned in and pecked my lips "can I have a bite?"

Me : "nooo" I bit into the apple as I put on my safety belt with the apple still in my mouth and he started the car ignition. When I turned to face him he took it and bit into it to then kissed me again

Him : "Thank you"

Me : *smiles* "Let's just go"

We drove off to the mall and because it was still kind of early it wasn't busy at all, Lifa had me choosing a few dresses and skirts here & there, totally not my style but I guess it is time for change. I mean I have no reason to be self conscious right?

After a whole lot of shopping we went to buy something to eat and went to Lifa's place, it was early afternoon so I was gonna stay with him till late. As soon as we got into the house I took off my sandals and threw myself on the couch, I was tired!

"Baby anything to drink?" He said that making his way out of the bedroom cause he went to put away the shopping bags. I shook my head with my eyes closed, he joined me on the couch and kissed my neck "baby?"

Me : "Mhh?"

Him : "let's go freshen up, you'll feel better after a shower" I opened my eyes and looked at him

Me : "Together?" He nodded

Him : "please" I sat up, so did he

Me : "baby..." He got up and held out his hand

Him : "come" I got up and followed behind him

to the bathroom "I'm not gonna do anything you don't want me to do baby, relax" he placed his hands on my shoulders and massaged them a bit "we won't have sex" I breathed out "yet" he pecked my forehead and turned on the water in the shower before turning his attention back to me, pulling me towards him.

Me : "Baby" he cupped my one cheek and took my lips into his briefly

Him : "mh?" He placed his hands on my figure and slowly slid them down to my ass, I exhaled softly, I felt myself releasing juices. "Yes baby?" He looked at me while taking my ass into his hands

Me : "No sex?" He pecked my lips

Him : "Nothing you not comfortable with angel" he pulled me closer and I felt the huge bulge that had built up in his pants "Now relax please, I just want to feel your skin against mine" he

kissed me again and I returned it with as much passion as he gave me, I kinda relaxed and let myself enjoy the moment. I felt so much being evoked in me, feelings that I wasn't familiar with.

His hand moved from my ass up to my breast and he squeezed them slightly, his breathing had changed mine too. He pulled out of the kiss

"Can I take this off?" He asked while untying the belt of my pants, I swallowed and nodded

"Yes" I said softly, he smiled and pecked my lips again. He took the pants off, his eyes didn't leave mine in that process. Soon after my vest followed and I was left with my underwear, he took one step back and looked at me making me shy & somewhat self conscious

"You look beautiful Babalwa" I bit on my bottom lip nervously, I didn't know what was coming next. He took off the shorts he had on and was left with his underwear. I just stood there

watching him.

Him : "Love" I looked at him "Please relax"

Me : "I am"

Him : "No you're not" I sighed, he sat on the toilet sit and pulled me to stand in between his legs "I'm not going to hurt you" he kissed my stomach "I love you"

Me : "And I love you"

Him : "And you trust me?" I nodded "Then relax"
I nodded once again

Me : "Okay" he reached for my back and unhooked my bra letting the straps fall down my shoulders, I watched it fall on the floor.

Him : "Okay?" I nodded, he placed another soft peck on my stomach "I'm going to take this off now" he said that holding the waistline of my panty, he looked at me for approval and I nodded yet again. He pulled it down slowly

while looking me in the eye, when he got to my knees I held onto his shoulder as I stepped out of. "Thank you" he ran his hands up and down my thighs up my hips slightly squeezing my ass while planting soft kisses on my stomach.

The bathroom was now filled with steam, he asked me turn around for him and I hesitantly did, I felt his soft kisses on my ass cheeks and him cursing softly. He stood up and I felt his hand on my waist then his breathe against my neck.

"I love you" he said right next to my ear, that sent chills down my spin and a sensation down there. I turned around and his member was standing up in the air looking at me, I swallowed

Me : "Baby" I said looking at his member still

Him : "I'm sorry I can't help it baby your body is beautiful" he put his hand over it and opened the shower sliding door, we stepped inside.

The water fell on our bodies, in a way relaxing me. Lifa didn't say anything we just stood there looking at each other, he smiled and winked at me. I let out a giggle, he grabbed the soap and scrub, washed every inch of my body slowly. I felt so hot, even my breathing had hitched. My nipples were hard and standing for attention, he dropped the scrub on the floot and put the soap away & begun using his hands. He started with my boobs, slowly massaging and pinching my nipples, I crossed my legs as I felt a throbbing sensation in between my legs.

"Ba..baby" he kissed me but I pulled out "Lifa"

Him : "Wanna get out the shower?"

Me : *nods* "Please"

He turned the water off and we stepped outside, he grabbed the towel and handed it to me before I knew it he had me scooped up in his arms and headed to the bedroom. He laid me

down on the bed and wiped me with the towel before wiping himself and joining me on the bed. We laid there naked with kissing here and there, him running his hands all over my naked body that I had even grown used to his touch. More comfortable in this position, naked & vulnerable that was.

"Please get on top" he asked laying on his back, I sat up and looked at his hard shaft which was even dripping of pre-cum "I won't put him in baby, come"

I slowly got on top and he held me by my waist, I sat on his thighs while his member laid straight on his stomach. His hands went up to my breast and he massaged them

"can I get a kiss" he asked pulling me closer to him, soon our lips were intertwined and our tongues colliding against each other. His hands never left my boobs but were now pinching my nipples making me restless, I found myself

moving up and down his hard cock even letting soft moans because of how good it felt. This feeling was foreign yet so addictive, I wanted more I don't know I just wanted more!

"babyyy" I cried out "more please" he pulled out of our kiss and looked at me with bloodshot eyes

Him : "More?" I nodded while biting my lips, he hadn't stopped working on my nipples. "You sure?"

Me : "Yes please" he turned us over and was now on top.

Him : "Okay" he pecked my lips then moved to my neck, nibbling on it and going up ear "stop me if you feel uncomfortable" I nodded and he moved down to my breast taking my nipples into his mouth one by one my toes curled and back arched "you like that?"

"Yesss" I said breathlessly, he moved down my

stomach and I tensed up. He must have noticed cause he stopped

Him : "Baby, trust me"

Me : "I'm scared" he moved up to my face again

Him : "Hey, it's me. Lifa" he pecked my lips "I won't hurt you baby" I felt his hand at entrance, he opened up my lips down there and ran his fingers up and down a few times "I just want to give you pleasure baby, appreciate your body" I bit on my bottom lip as he rubbed against my clit and placed a very wet kiss on my neck "okay?" I nodded and he went down once again coming face to face with my vagina. "it's beautiful" I looked down on him "relax baby"

He planted soft kisses around it before sweeping my juices with tongue and swirling it around my clitoris, I released a soft moan. He sucked on it giving me a great deal of pleasure, I found myself fisting on the sheets and

moaning his name out senselessly, before I let out a loud scream as a wave of pleasure rushed through my body. I was shaking like a leaf when he came back up to my face.

"That was beautiful" he kissed me "Thank you" I looked aside "Baby?"

Me : "Am I now supposed to do the same to you?"

Him : "What"

Me : "You expecting me to pleasure you too?"

Him : "Baby you not ready for that, I won't push you and besides I got pleasure watching orgasm penting because of me" I hid my face in his neck and he chuckled "I love you beautiful"

Me : "I love you too" we kissed and he laid besides me taking me in his arms, whispering sweet nothings until I fell asleep.

"Baby" I heard him call out "Babalwa, vuka. It's

getting late, I don't want you getting in trouble" I opened my eyes and turned to look at him. He was standing already dressed.

Me : "What time is it?"

Him : "Past four love, get up and go shower so that we can eat and I'll take you home on time"

Me : *groans* "But I'm tired"

Him : *smiles* "I know baby" he sat next to me "but we don't want to get in trouble especially since your brother knows about us" I pouted and he kissed me "get up!" He slapped my thigh "ouch!" He winked and walked out to the lounge area

"Make quick baby I'm hungry and I don't wanna eat alone!" He shouted, I got up from the bed.

Me : "Okay!"

By the time I finished he had already started eating so I joined him and off we went.

When I walked into the yard mom's car was already parked outside in the driveway, there were also two foreign SUVs' parked on the other side of the road. I walked in and the house was quiet. I left my shopping bags at the door.

"Ma!?" I called out as I walked to the lounge only to be met by my mom looking distressed and men in black standing in the lounge looking serious. I cleared my throat "Mama?" She looked up at me "what's going on?"

Her : "Please call your brother"

Me : "Why? What's going on? Who are these people?"

Her : "Babalwa please" she pleaded sounding defeated

Me : "Okay" I took my phone out of my back pocket.

•

THE END

P.S.

Thank you all for your patience and not being a rude audience, you know cursing me out on my absence like other readers do on some diaries. Thank you all for giving me a chance to pull myself towards myself, y'all are understanding and patient. Appreciate it